

037

7/6

THE NEW ERA GRAMMAR
OF MODERN IRISH

THE NEW YORK LIBRARY
OF THE ASTOR LENOX AND TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

THE NEW ERA GRAMMAR OF MODERN IRISH

By
THE REV. GERALD O'NOLAN

M.A., B.D., D.LITT.

PROFESSOR OF IRISH, ST. PATRICK'S COLLEGE, MAYNOOTH

Dom is dleáct a reáct do ríomháó,
Dom is eol a sceol do scaoileáó,
Dom is áil a cáil do cumneamh,
Ó's liom is cóir a glóir do niamháó.

(*Cf. Keating's Poems, 48.*)

THE EDUCATIONAL COMPANY OF IRELAND
LIMITED
DUBLIN AND CORK
1934

PRINTED BY
THE EDUCATIONAL COMPANY
OF IRELAND, LIMITED
89 TALBOT STREET, DUBLIN

BROLLÁC.

Do ḡaeḡealaib na hÉireann toirḡrim an leabhrán so, le hioncas go mberḡ sé 'na “ḡac sa ḡearnam” ḡóib i ḡcoinnib an ḡéarlačas, agus i ḡcoinnib na ḡallḡacḡa. Tá teangḡa ársa uasal aḡainn, agus cár mḡsḡe ḡúinn beic móḡḡalac aistḡ? Tá ḡaoine ann, agus is é is ḡóic leo ḡur ruḡ ḡan raḡ an ḡramḡḡac—ḡur fearr i ḡḡaḡ, aḡeirḡ, claoḡe leis an litḡḡeacḡ! 'Seḡḡ, agus ḡan teangḡa ná litḡḡeacḡ a ḡuissint ar aon tsḡacḡ! Tá ḡul amḡḡa uaḡḡásac ar an ḡream san. Is éacḡac an congḡam an ḡramḡḡac ḡo luḡt ḡoḡluma na teangḡan agus ḡo luḡt léigḡe na litḡḡeacḡa. Ní congḡam ḡo ḡḡí í! Oireann culaic uasal ḡo smaomeam áluinn, ac is mó smaomeam áluinn a loitḡear ḡo minic le culaic ḡiobalac ḡránḡa ḡo cur uime! “Omne tulit punctum qui miscuit utile dulci!”

ḡEARÓḡO Ó NUALLÁIN

as Muiḡ Nuḡḡac ḡom
7 lá 'le ḡriḡoe moiu aḡainn.

1934.

THEORY

The following is a summary of the theory of the present work. It is intended to be a brief statement of the main ideas, and not a full treatment of the subject. The theory is based on the assumption that the universe is a continuous whole, and that the parts are not separated from each other. It is also based on the assumption that the universe is a dynamic system, and that the parts are in constant motion. The theory is based on the assumption that the universe is a unified whole, and that the parts are not separated from each other. It is also based on the assumption that the universe is a dynamic system, and that the parts are in constant motion. The theory is based on the assumption that the universe is a unified whole, and that the parts are not separated from each other. It is also based on the assumption that the universe is a dynamic system, and that the parts are in constant motion.

CONCLUSION

It is hoped that the above theory will be found to be of interest to the reader. It is also hoped that the reader will find the theory to be a contribution to the knowledge of the universe.

CONTENTS

(The numbers at the beginning of the lines refer to the sections).

	Page
Abbreviations	xiii

PART I.—PHONOLOGY.

Section	
I.—The modern Irish Alphabet	1
II.—The Simple Vowels (24)	1
III.—The Diphthongs (17)	1
IV.—The Consonants (60)	1
V.—Table of Modern Irish Consonants	2
VI.—Examination of the Sounds	3
Aspiration and Eclipsis, and their causes	5
Dynamic Aspiration and Eclipsis	6

PART II.—ACCIDENCE.

Chapter I.—The Article.

1.—Declension	7
3.—Aspiration after	8
4.—Eclipsis „	9
5.—The form na h-	9
7.—Survivals	10

Chapter II.—The Noun.

8.—Various Kinds of Stems	11
10-20.—First Declension	11
21-31.—Second „	14
32-44.—Third „	16
45-51.—Fourth „	19
52-76.—Fifth „	21

Chapter III.—The Adjective.

78.—First Declension	29
79.—Second „	29
80.—Third „	29
81.—Fourth „	30

Section	Page
82-3.—Notes	30
84.—Formation	31
85-92.—Comparison	32
93-107.—Numeral Adjectives	36
108.—Adjectives of quantity, not numerals	43
109.—Pronominal Adjectives	45

Chapter IV.—The Pronoun.

110.—The Personal Pronouns	47
111-115.—Prepositional Pronouns	48
116.—Notes on „ „	50
117.—G. prons. suffixed to preps.	51
118.—Suffixed -o in Verbs	51
119-120.—Demonstrative Pronouns	51
121.—Interrogative Pronouns	52
122-3.— „ Particles	52
124.—Indefinite Pronouns	53
125.—Reflexive „	54
126-7.—Relative „	54

Chapter V.—The Verb.

129.—Simple Verbs	58
130.—Subsidiary Forms	60
131.—Notes on Moods and Tenses	60
133-4.—Second Conjugation	62
135-152.—Compound Verbs	63
153.—The Substantive Verb	75
154.—The Copula	76
155.—Remains of Compound Verbs	77

Chapter VI.—Adverbs.

156-8.—Various Kinds	79
159.—Notes on the Adverbs	82

Chapter VII.—Conjunctions.

160-1.—Eleven different kinds	84
-------------------------------	----

Chapter VIII.—Prepositions.

162.—Simple and Compound. Some governing D., some A., and some either	88
---	----

Chapter IX.—Interjections—(163)

PART III.—SYNTAX.

Section	Page
Chapter I.—Syntax of the Article.	
164.—Syntactical Rules	92
165.—Article in I., not in E.	95
166.—Vivid use of the Article	97
Chapter II.—Syntax of the Noun.	
167.—Uses of the Nominative	98
168.—The Projected „	98
169.—The Virtual „	98
170.—Apposition	99
171.—Absolute Construction	100
172.—Sense „	101
173.—The Genitive	102
174.—The Dative	104
175-6.—The Accusative	106
177.—The Vocative	108
178.—The Verbal Noun	108
179.—Phrase Nouns	110
180.—Noun Clauses	112
181.—Dynamic Aspiration	113
182.—Remarks on the Cases	113
183.—Number	113
Chapter III.—Syntax of the Adjective.	
184-194.—	115
Chapter IV.—Syntax of the Pronoun.	
195.—Fully declined. Sometimes abs.	121
196.—Virtual N. or A. of Extent in Space	121
197.—The Genitive forms	122
198.—The Dative „	122
199-216.—Prolepsis	122
200.—ê, í, 1αο, εαο	123
201.—Proleptic sé	123
202.— „ san	124
203.— „ so, seo	124
204.— „ é sm	124
205.— „ s1oé (s1oí, s1o 1αο)	125
206-11.— „ G. sg. Δ	125
212.—Proportion Sentences	127

Section	Page
213.—Proleptic Δ (G. pl.)	129
214.—The Suffixed Pronouns 1 ^o $\nu\epsilon$. 2 ^o $\Delta\kappa\upsilon$. 3 ^o $\Delta\iota\kappa$, $\iota\epsilon\iota\varsigma$ $\upsilon\iota\mu\epsilon$, $\kappa\upsilon\iota\varsigma$, etc. 4 ^o $\Delta\mu\lambda\Delta\iota\omicron$	129
216.—Further remarks on proleptic Δ	132
217.—The Demonstrative Pronouns	133
218.—The Interrogative	134
219.—Analogical $\kappa\omicron$	135
220.—Exclamatory "How!"	135
221.—Indefinite Pronouns	136
222.—The Suffixed Pronouns	136
223.—The Relative Pronouns :—	
I.—Of Extent in Degree	137
II.—Direct for Oblique :—	
A.—In Temporal Clauses	137
B.—In Modal	138
C.—In Complex Elliptical Sentences	139
D.—In a somewhat rare construction	139
III.—The Oblique Rel. Δ^n , $\Delta\kappa^c$	139
IV.—Double Relative Construction	140
V.—Multiple Relative Sentences	143
VI.—Negative Relatives	143
VII.—Rel. in Compar. and Superl. Clauses	144
VIII.—Interrogative and Relative	144
IX.—The Compound Relative	144

Chapter V.—Syntax of the Verb.

The Copula	146
224.—A Logical Copula	146
225.—Subject and Predicate	147
226-244.—Classification Sentences	147
245-260.—Identification	151
261.—Note on Proper Names	156
262.—The proleptic pronoun in Type I	156
263.—Complex Elliptical Sentences	156
264-9.—Idioms with "is"	157
270.—The Substantive Verb	161
271.—Introductory " $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ "	163
272-289.—Other Verbs	164
272.—Order of words	164
273.—Number	164

CONTENTS

xi

Section	Page
274.—Tense	165
275.—Mood	165
276.—The Indicative	166
277.—The Conditional	166
278.—The Subjunctive	167
279-285.—Syntax of Conditional Sentences	168
286.—Auxiliary <i>ʋeɪm</i>	170
287.—Neutral „	170
288.— <i>ʋeɪɪm</i>	171
289.— <i>ʋéɪm</i>	171
290.—Impersonal Verbs	171
291-2.—The Autonomous Forms	172
293.—Special uses of the Participle	174

Chapter VI.—Syntax of Adverbs.

294-5.—Notes	176
296-8.—Expression of the Date	177

Chapter VII.—Syntax of Conjunctions.

299.— <i>Δγus</i> ; <i>Δγus</i> , <i>νά</i> ; <i>ní</i> . . . <i>νά</i> ; <i>ní</i> . . . <i>νά ní</i> ; <i>νά ná</i> <i>νό ná</i> ; <i>μά</i> with <i>Condit.</i> ; <i>ʋά mba</i> =even ; <i>νά</i> , <i>than</i>	179
---	-----

Chapter VIII.—Syntax of Prepositions.

300.—Partitive <i>ʋe</i>	182
301.—Defining <i>ʋe</i>	183
302.—Partitive <i>Δγ</i>	183
303.—Prepositional Phrases	184
304.—Meanings and Uses of Simple Prepositions	184
305.—Prepositions after Nouns and Adjectives	189
306.—Prepositions after Verbs	191
307.—Various	197

Chapter IX.—Syntax of the Sentence.

308.—Ellipsis and Change of Construction	198
309.—Contamination, etc.	199
310-312.—Special Problems	199
313.—Repetition of Words	202
314.—Order of Words	203
315.—Simile and Metaphor	204
316.—Hendiadys, and Alliterative Doublets	205

Section	Page
317.—Illogical Elements in Construction	205
318.—Chiastic Construction	206
319.—Progressive Forms	206
320.—I. objective rather than subjective	206
321.—I. concrete „ „ abstract	206
322.—Difference of Colouring	207

PART IV.—PROSODY.

323.—The Metres	208
324.—Syllabic Metres (Ὅαν Ὀίρεαζ)	208
A.—Θεῖβιρε.—Rules. Classification of Consonants. Ex.	208
B.—Ῥανναῖγεαζτ μόν	210
C.—Ῥανναῖγεαζτ μόν ζαῖρι	211
D.— „ θεαζ	211
E.— „ „ „	211
F.—Σέαυναό (Σέαυραό)	212
G.—Θεαζναό θεαζ	212
H.— „ μόν	213
I.—Cας-βάιρινε	213
J.—Ῥιονναῖρι	213
325.—Accentual Metres	214
A.—λαοι (λαοιό)	214
B.—Ῥοσc	215
C.—Cαοιμεαό (Cυῖρεαμ ; μαρβνα)	215
D.—Διμράν	216

Appendix.—WORD FORMATION.

326-337.—A.—Verbal Nouns	221
338.— B.—Other Nouns	224
338.— I.—Combination of Adjective and Noun	224
339.— II.—Combination of Noun and Noun	224
340.— III.—Combination of Indeclinable Particle with Noun	224
341-362.— IV.—By means of Prepositional Prefixes	225
363.— V.—By means of Suffixes. A.—From Adjectives	231
364.— B.—From Nouns	233
365.— C.—From Adverbs, Prepositions, Pronouns	236
366.— D.—From Verbs	236
367.—Formation of Adjectives	237
368.—Formation of Verbs	237

ABBREVIATIONS.

- A.—Accusative.
 Δes.—Δesop Δ τάμης 50
 ηέιρινν.
 ΔΟΟ.—Poems of Δongus Ó
 Όάλαίς.
 ΔΟR.—Δοϋάσαν Ó Ρατταίε.
 ΔR.—Deατα Δοϋα Ruαrò.
 BK.—Bergin's Keating.
 bn.—Bible Stories
 (O'Leary).
 br.—BRICKIU.
 CCU.—Céao de Ceoltaib
 Ulaò.
 CD.—An Craos Deamán.
 CMO.—Críost Mac Oé.
 Conn.—Connacht.
 CS.—na Ceitre Soisgéil
 (O'Leary).
 D.—Dative.
 OÖ.—Keating's "Oíon-
 brollaó."
 OÖ.—Oán Oé (M'Kenna).
 Dott.—Dottin, Manuel
 d'Irlandais Moyen.
 E.—English.
 eis.—Eisirt (O'Leary).
 ES.—Eoóair-sciat an
 Δiprinn.
 F.—Feminine.
 fC.—file an Comarais.
 ff.—Keating's forus feasa
 fo.—Calendar of Oengus.
 fSA.—fínn scéalta na
 h-Δraíbe.
 G.—Genitive.
 S.—Suaire.
 Gr.—Greek.
 ηΔic.—Poems of Ράοραίς in
 ηΔicéao.
 Im.—Imitation of Christ.
 K.—Keating.
 KH.—Keating's History.
 KP.—Keating's Poems.
 KTB.—Trí bior-šaoíte an
 báis.
 L.—Latin.
 lmc.—lušarò Mac Con
 (O'Leary).
 lo.—laoi Oisín ar Tír na
 n-Ós.
 lúC.—lúcián (O'Leary).
 M.—Munster ; masculine.
 mac.—Sgéalardeact na
 Macabéac.
 msr.—mo Sgéal fém.
 N.—Nominative ; niam.
 Neut.—Neuter.
 nnS.—naoi nšábaò an
 šíolla Ouib.
 P.—Predicate.
 PF.—Poems of Pearse
 Ferriter.
 PH.—Passions & Homilies
 (leabhar breac).
 PIM.—Primer of Irish
 Metrics.
 Pl.—Plural.
 pol.—P. O'Leary.
 S.—Subject ; singular ;
 Séaona.
 Ser.—Seanmóin 7 trí pícro
 (O'L.).
 Sš.—Sšot-bualao
 (O'Leary).

Smb.—Seacht mBuairò an Éirge Amac.

TBB.—Trí b10r-ḡaoite an bÁis (Keating).

TBC.—Tám bó Cuaitnge (O'L.).

Thurn.—Professor Thurneysen.

U.—Ulster. UP.—Ulster Proverb.

V.—Vocative. ZCP.—Zeitschrift für Celtische Philologie.

The sign “ γ ”=L. *et*, I. Δ gus. <=reduced from.
 >=reduced to.

GRAMMAR OF MODERN IRISH

PART I.

PHONOLOGY.

I.—The mod. I. alphabet has 18 letters :— Δ , e, ι , o, u (vowels) ; b, c, d, f, g, h, l, m, n, p, r, s, t (consonants). These 18 symbols have to represent 101 sounds. These sounds are :—

A.—Simple Vowels (24) :—1° Δ , o, u, e, ι (short— Δ , o, u being broad, e, ι being slender) ; the obscure vowel is represented by \eth ; a, slightly different from Δ . 2° $\acute{\Delta}$, \acute{o} , \acute{u} , \acute{e} , $\acute{\iota}$; \acute{a} (long variety of last a in 1°). 3° Δ , o, u, e, ι ; Δ —all nasal. 4° The modified vowels :— \acute{a} , a (slender) ; $\grave{\Delta}$ (broad e) ; y (broad ι). 5° Ulster $\Delta o = \acute{u}$, with unrounded lips.

II.—Exx. of the Simple Vowels :—1° Captaen, sop, bun, eite, sin. The 2nd syllable of capall has the obscure vowel ; the 1st syllable, has “a.” 2° $\acute{\tau}\acute{a}$, bó, cú, $\acute{\tau}\acute{e}$, $\acute{\tau}\acute{\iota}$; $\acute{\Delta}lumn$ (W’fd.). 3° $\acute{l}\acute{a}m$, cómgar, cumrta, séim, nime ; $\acute{\tau}\acute{a}$ (W’fd.). 4° Δ $\acute{S}\acute{e}\acute{a}m$, ciseám, etc. : Δ $\acute{\Delta}\acute{\tau}\acute{a}ir$, $\acute{g}\acute{e}\acute{a}itire$; caol, daol ; buíde, surde. 5° $\Delta o\grave{o}$.

III.—B.—Diphthongs (17) :—(a) Slurred :—1° Δu (nasal)— $\acute{S}\acute{a}mra\eth$. 2° au—ann, dall (M.). 3° ou (nasal)— $\acute{D}oimnac$ (M.). 4° ou—poll, $\acute{g}\acute{a}b\Delta$ (M.). 5° ay (nasal)— $\acute{\Delta}imleas$. 6° ay—camnt, raðarc. 7° oy— $\acute{D}oiminn$. 8° ey— $\acute{r}\acute{e}\acute{a}d\eth ma$, $\acute{g}\acute{e}ib\eth\acute{a}\eth$. 9° ei— $\acute{E}iblin$. (b) Unslurred :—1° ua—cuan, buan. 2° ue—cuam, buam. 3° ia— $\acute{r}\acute{\iota}\acute{a}l$, $\acute{c}\acute{\iota}\acute{a}l$. 4° ie— $\acute{D}\acute{r}\acute{\iota}\acute{a}m$, $\acute{r}\acute{\iota}\acute{a}m$. 5° ià— $\acute{s}\acute{g}\acute{e}\acute{a}l$, $\acute{b}\acute{e}\acute{a}l$ (Parts of M.). 6° ya— $\acute{r}\acute{\iota}\acute{a}\acute{g}\acute{a}l\acute{\tau}\acute{a}$. 7° ye— $\acute{r}\acute{\iota}\acute{a}\acute{g}\acute{a}il$ (not preceded by art.). 8° ia— $\acute{r}\acute{\iota}\acute{a}\eth\acute{a}m$ (2nd element, slender Δ short).

IV.—C.—The Consonants (60) :—The Consonants are divided according to :—(a) Point of articulation, into :—1. Labials. 2. Upper Dentals. 3. Lower Dentals. 4. Hard Palatals. 5. Soft Palatals. 6. Chordal—the consonant “n,” of which there are three varieties. (b) Mode of articulation, into :—1° Stop consonants. 2° Continuants. (c) Quality, into :—1. Broad, slender. 2. Nasal, non-nasal. 3. Long, short. 4. Breath, voice.

V.—Table of Modern Irish Consonants.

BROAD				SLENDER			
NON-NASAL		NASAL		NON-NASAL		NASAL	
Breath	Voice	Breath	Voice	Breath	Voice	Breath	Voice
I. Labials:— Stop Continuants—p, p̣, hW	b V, W, VW	hm m̃t̃ (f̃)	m ŵ, ŵ̃, vŵ	p p̣ (p̣)	b v (b̃, m̃)	hm m̃t̃	m ŵ̃ (m̃)
II. Upper Dentals:— Stops—t Cont.—h l	t { l { Contact between tongue and teeth	hn tip of teeth	n	t hr hl (Down-turned tip. Contact with blade of tongue) { Approach of blade of tongue to teeth { Contact of blade of tongue with teeth	ʈ r l	hn r l	n
III. Lower Dentals:— Continuants— S, Sh	Z, Zh	—	—	s, sh	z, zh	—	—
IV. Hard Palatals:— Stops— Continuants—	— —	— —	— —	c č (ś)	ɟ ǰ (ʝ)	hnɟ —	nɟ —
V. Soft Palatals— Stops—c Cont.—č	ɟ ǰ (ʝ)	hnɟ —	nɟ —	— —	— —	— —	— —
VI. Chordals— h (č, ś, ʃ)	—	h (čś, W'fd.) huim̃t̃ !	—	h (č, ś, ʃ) čip̃r, čuiɟ, śm̃	—	—	—

VI.—1° A vowel, diphthong or consonant is nasal, when the voice (or breath) used in its formation issues not only through the lips, but through the nasal cavity as well :— $\lambda\acute{\alpha}\mu$ (Δ), $\Theta\omicron\mu\acute{\nu}\alpha\varsigma$ ($\omicron\upsilon$), $\zeta\eta\acute{o}\tau\alpha$ (η).

2° A diphthong is broad or slender, or both, according to the nature of the component vowels. E.g., 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 (IIIa), 1, 6 (IIIb) are broad. 9 (IIIa), 4, 8 (IIIb) are slender ; 2, 7 (IIIb) are broad-slender ; 8 (IIIa), 3, 5 (IIIb) are slender-broad.

3° A breath-sound is one in the production of which the vocal chords are not vibrating. Most vowels are voiced, but the final vowel of the Holy Name, $\acute{\iota}\omicron\varsigma\alpha$, is often unvoiced. Every breath consonant contains a breath vowel, rendered consonantal by the explosion or the audible friction accompanying its production.

4° A stop consonant is one for the production of which the column of breath (or voice) must be stopped momentarily at a certain point. The opening is followed by a puff of air (voiced or unvoiced). Hence these consonants are sometimes called Plosives, or Explosives.

5° A continuant consonant is one in the production of which there is no such stoppage, but only an approach of certain parts of the vocal organs, sufficient to cause audible friction. When the friction is absent we get a vowel. Hence the difference between vowel and consonant is one of degree. Vowels may easily become (or develop) consonants :—Eg., the u in $u\lambda\acute{\alpha}\mu$ is often “ w ” ; the υ in $\eta\acute{\iota}\ \upsilon\phi\upsilon\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon$ is a consonantal glide between $\acute{\iota}$ and \acute{u} . So consonants may become vowels, or, in combination with vowels, develop diphthongs.— $u\zeta\alpha\theta$ becomes \acute{u} ; $\rho\omicron\tau\tau$, $\kappa\alpha\theta\alpha\varsigma$, develop diphthongs.

6° A stop consonant is momentary, and cannot be continued at will. The nasal hum which, in the case of m , n , $\eta\varsigma$, can be continued at will, is not a consonant at all, but the constituent vowel of the consonant. Cf. this vocalic hum with the frictional noise (consonantal) of, say, the English “ th ” in “*though*.” This frictional noise, can of course be continued as long as the breath lasts.

7° *m*, *n*, *ng* are not usually classified as stops. But as a complete oral stoppage is essential, we see no valid reason for excluding them from this category. *l* and *r*, are continuants, because, although an oral stoppage is required (see 8°) it is not complete, and the continuant element is consonantal, not (as in the case of *m*, *n*, *ng*) vocalic.

8° *l* and *r* are neither complete stops nor complete continuants. For “*l*” there is a stoppage at the front teeth, with an opening at the sides of the tongue; for “*r*” there is a stoppage at the sides of the tongue, the opening being in front, between the tip (broad *r*) or the blade (slender *r*) of the tongue, and the roots or ivory of the upper teeth. “*l*,” is a lateral trill, “*r*” a frontal trill. The trill is more marked in “*r*” than in “*l*,” and more marked in broad “*r*” than in slender “*r*.”

9° For all broad sounds the main body of the tongue is kept low in the mouth, and high for slender sounds.

10° The consonant “*nW*” (=wh in Eng. “what”) occurs in—*bΔ mΔit uΔit é vÉanam*.

11° The consonant “*n*” :—(a) Unvoices a voiced consonant :—*liomčΔ=liofΔ*, *āmčΔč=afΔč*. (b) Gives up its natural quality (in M.) :—*ní čuigim* (*n*- slender) : *vroičeav* (*n*- broad) : *mΔit*, *cΔit* (*n*- broad). (c) In the 2nd syll. -*Δč* regularly attracts the accent (in M.). Not, however, if “*n*” intervenes :—*ceatΔč*, *bacΔč* : But—*ceatčΔč*, *vleagčΔč*, etc.

12° Aspiration :—A single consonant between two vowels was aspirated :—(a) Initially :—*ceann an fīr móir* : *an tsúil glas*. (b) Medially :—*leabhar*, *rógnam* (<*fo-ḡníom*). (c) Final :—*cat*, *clúm*, *ḡnāt*, etc.

13° Dynamic Aspiration :—(a) *ḡan cos*—legless ; *ḡan cos*—without one particular leg. (b) *an céav sgéat*—the 1st story (Asp. irregular. Perhaps to distinguish from—*an céav sgéat*—the 100 stories). (c) *Bean Seám*—S.’s wife (Regular, as *bean* orig. ended in a vowel). *mac Seám* (Irregular).

14° *n-* is used (where phonetically unjustified) :—*do h-órduigeað, do h-innseað* : but—*o'órduig sé, o'mnis sé*.

15° Loss of Aspiration:—*crot*: *cruť*; the init. const. of Auton. vbs. often resists asp.—*Ní mar a braiítear a bítear*—Things are not what they seem.

16° Eclipsis :—(a) Initial :—*óá otrián*—two thirds (*trián* orig. neut.) ; *Sliað ġCua* (*sliað*, neut. *s-* stem, but eclipses on anal. of neut. *o-* and *n-* stems ; *Óát ġCais* (*óát* orig. neuter). The final nasal which causes initial eclipsis appears as :—1. *n-* before a vowel—*ceol na n-éan*. 2. *m-* before *b*—*ar an mbóro*. 3. *b-* before *p*—*ar an bport*. 4. *ḃ* before *f*—*ar an ḃrumneois*. 5. *n-* before *o*—*óúnað na n-óóirse*. 6. *o-* before *t*—*ar an otaíam*. 7. *ġ-* before *c*—*torað na ġcrann*. 8. *n* (= *nġ*) before *ġ*—*Clann na nġaeðeal*. Sometimes initial *s*, *sh* are eclipsed giving *z*, *zh* :—*le saogal na saogal* (= *zaol*) ; *tiġ na saġart* (= *zaġart*) ; *an suíorá ? an sínřá ?* Eclipsis, therefore, practically means the voicing of a breath consonant, or the nasalizing of a voiced one.

(b) Medial :—*Coġað, coġar, coġuas* (in these only the resultant sound is written). In *coiġcrióc, éaġcóir, éavtrom*, and many others, the eclipsed consonant also appears. Sometimes eclipsing *n-* and the resultant sound are both written :—*comblíocť, naonḃar, deicniubar* (in the last two *-ḃ-* is the eclipsed *f-* of *řear*). In some borrowed words *ġ*, *o*, appear medially for *c*, *t* :—*Cuġean* (L. *coquina*), *saġart* (L. *sacerdos*), *noḃlaġs* (L. *Natalicia*), *eaglaġs* (Ecclesia), *seagat* (secale). In *saogal* (L. *saeculum*), *-ġ-* because of assonance, in poetry, with *baogal*. *no*, med. and final > *nn* :—*beannaćť* (O.I. *berdacht*), *áġřeann*, etc.

(c) Final Eclipsis :—*Céav* (<cent-), 100 ; *céav* (<cintu-), first ; *oéav* (<dent-) ; *řormaov* (<forment-), envy ; *bríġro, cúġs, oéaġs*, etc. Sometimes final *t* > *o* :—*áicřo*, disease (<L. *accidit*) ; *ceav*, permission (<L. *li-cet*) ; *inro*, Shrovetide (<L. *initium*) ; *řríonóro* (<L. *Trinitatem*). When an eclipsing word ends *now* with the sound “*n*,” the latter unvoices

the following initial (already voiced by eclipsis), so that the eclipsis is nullified :—*veic cinn, seact tíorlaictí an Spioraid naomh* (seact here follows *veic*). In :—*veic mbliana*, “*ml*” is unvoiced.

(d) Dynamic Eclipsis :—Eclipsis, like Aspiration, is sometimes contrary to phonetic law, and the sg. n. is then used dynamically (as in *trí capall*, on the analogy of *trí céad*) :—

*Trí téada ba dhinn, trí créacta sa tír,
Trí naom-leimh naomta tug séar-séarc do Chríost ;
A dtrí mbéal, a dtrí scroíde, a dtrí saor-corp fáilís,
A dtrí n-éadan ba gléiseal as daolaibh is díc*

(A. Ó'R. 46)—

Three melodious strings, three glens in the earth,
Three sainted, holy children who fondly loved Christ,
Their three mouths, their three hearts, their three noble
bodies beneath a stone, Their three fair, bright foreheads
the prey of chafers—it is ruin !

PART II.

CHAPTER I.

THE ARTICLE (1—7).

1.—There is no indefinite article in Irish. The definite article is declined thus :—

		Singular.	
M.			F.
N.A. before vowel	}	an t-	N.A.D. (before vowels and consonants other than s-)
G. „ s-			} an'
		N.A. (before s-)	an t-
All other cases :—	an	G. (before consonants)	na
		(„ vowels)	na h-

Plural.

N.A.D. (before consonants) :	na
(„ vowels) :	na h-
G. (before consonants) :	na ⁿ
(„ vowels) :	na n-

Dual.

M. and F. (in all cases) :—an.

Examples :—M. sg.—An fear so, this man ; do'n fear so, to this man ; ar an bfeair so, on this man ; an t-*Ádair* p. *Ó Laoigaire*, Fr. P. O'Leary ; an t-*arán* so na beatao, this Bread of Life ; ceann an fíre seo, this man's head ; leabhair an *Ádair* p. *Ó Laoigaire*, Fr. P. O'Leary's books ; síle an tsolais, (the) brightness of the light.

F. sg.—*Ṭá an óróóg san briste*, that thumb is broken ; *Ṭá an bean so breoite*, this woman is sick ; *an tsúil deas atá tinn* (it is) the right eye that is sore ; *Ṭá fear na mná san ar buite*, that woman's husband is mad ; *bárr na h-óróóige* (the) top of the thumb.

Pl. M. and F.—*Na fir seo*, these men ; *na h-óróóga san*, those thumbs ; *Cumann na mBan*, the women's Association ; *ceol na n-éan*, the music of the birds,

Dual.—*An dá shagart úr*, those two priests (taken separately) ; *an dá aspal déag*, the twelve Apostles ; *an dá bróig seo*, these two shoes.

2.—The article was originally an adjective formed from the two demonstratives, *sin* (*san*) and *to* (*ta*). (Cf. Lat. *is-tum*, *is-tam*). *To-* and *ta-* being, in the article, pretonic, appeared at first as *ro-*, *ra-*. After prepositions which originally ended in a consonant, the initial *s-* of the article appears, but is usually written with the preposition. E.g.—*as an*, *as na* ; *ins an*, *ins na* ; *leis an*, *leis na* ; *tar san áit*, over the ford (but frequently lost here—nearly always in the Pl.—*tar na beartaib*). Also this *s-* appears after *ro* and *re* (with the Pl.), *go*, *to* (in certain phrases), *ó* (in Pl.) and *tré*. Thus :—*ro sna raome sin*, to those persons ; *gus an lá mui*, until to-day. Especially in such phrases as :—*seachtmáin is lá mui*, this day week ; *trés an mbí sí sa t-am*, through life everlasting. Instead of *trés an*, Munster Irish uses *trí an* ; but *tré sna* in the Pl.

3.—The article *aspirates* :—

(a) N.A. sg. F.—This is phonetically irregular in the A., which follows the N. in modern Irish. *o* and *t* resist this aspiration in both cases. E.g.—*an dúil sin*, that desire ; *an t-oil*, Will ; *an tuiscint*, Intelligence.

(b) D. sg. of all genders—but not always. Many irregularities arise from the widespread confusion of D. and A., after prepositions which originally governed both cases. *Ar an bóro*, on the table (properly D., but used in U. for A. as well). *Ar an mbóro* (properly A., but used in M. for D. as well). Thus, *ta sé ar an bóro* (*rest*) would

be right according to the old distinction ; but *oo cáit sé anuas ar an mbóro é* (*motion*).

(c) G. sg. M.—*níl leigheas le faḡáil ac leigheas an báis*, the only remedy is that of death. *o* and *τ* resist aspiration. *Ṯigearna an Ṯaitim*, the landlord ; *beata an oume*, Man's life.

(d) The form *an τ-* is always due to an aspirated *s* :—

1°. In *an τ-actair*, *an τ-úrlár*, *an τ-arán*, the father, the floor, the bread (N. sg. M.), the *τ-* is due to the aspiration of the final *-s* of *the article* itself ; *s=h*, which, acting on the *-o-* of the article, changed it into *τ-* (**sindos athir*). In mod. I. the A. follows the N.

2°. In *an Ṯsaḡairt*, of the priest (G. sg. M.), and *an Ṯsúil*, the eye (N. sg. F.) *τ-* comes from *o-* of the article under the influence of the aspirated *s-* of *the noun*. (**Sindi shagairt*; **sinda shúlis*). The *s* in these cases is aspirated, though undotted. It is better not to say that the article *prefixes τ-* to the noun. The *τ-* is an integral part of the article itself.

4.—The article *eclipses* :—

(a) G. Pl.—*Ceol na n-éan* (*n-* before vowels), the birds' music ; *cur na bpeár le céile*, uniting the men.

(b) Eclipsis in the sg. after prepositions which originally governed an A. still remains to some extent, but has been disturbed considerably. (See 3 (b) above).

5.—The article, before vowels, appears as *na n-*

(a) In G. sg. F.—*1 lár na n-oróce*, in the middle of the night. The *n-* is due to the aspiration of final *-s* of the article, which, in G. sg. F. was **sindas* (*..innah-*, *na n-*).

(b) In N.A.D. pl.—(Irregular in M., *na n-éisg*, the fishes=O.I. *ind éisg*. Irregular also in D. pl.—*oo sna n-éminib*, to the little birds).

6.—The only extant use of the neuter sg. article is what is now called the compound relative. E.g., *a*

n-órouigeann sé dúinn, the (thing which) he orders us (all that he orders us).

7.—Two other notable survivals of special forms of the article are :—

(a) An té, he who, they who (...O.I. int-í, N.sg. M. of the article, with the deictic particle -í, seen in Gk. houtos-í; Lat. qui...quo-i).

(b) The noun nír, thing, developed partly from O.I. an-í (Neut. of int-í), that which, the thing which ; and partly from ní, the Neut. of O.I. nech=anyone.

The word té is now an indeclinable noun, and can be used either of an individual or of a class ; as also of either gender.

“ An té bíonn síos buailtear cos aír,
An té bíonn suas óltar deoc aír.” (Proverb).

(They who are down are trodden under foot, they who are successful are toasted.)

CHAPTER II.

THE NOUN (8—76).

8.—For the purposes of Declension, Nouns are divided according to the ending of the stem, which may either be vocalic or consonantal. Hence we arrive at the following scheme, which, however, has been much disturbed, owing to the confusion of different types :—

First Decl.	Second Decl.	Third Decl.	Fourth Decl.	Fifth Decl.
O- stems.	Λ- stems	1 and 11- stems.	10- and 1Δ- stems.	Consonan- tal stems.

9.—There were three genders in O.I., but the Neuter has to a great extent fallen into disuse. Nouns are now generally reckoned as M. or F.

FIRST DECLENSION.

10.—All the nouns of this declension are now M., and all end, in N. sg., in a broad consonant, except ʒΔ, spear (11), and ʋ1Δ, God (15).

11.—The Voc. sg., and pl., is preceded by the particle Δ. There are five cases—Nom., Gen., Dat., Acc., Voc. In modern Irish the Acc., in most instances, has the same form as the Nom. Examples :—

ʃear, a man. Sg.—D.A.N.—ʃear. V.G. ʃ1r.

Ceann, head. „ „ ceann. „ c1nn. (D. often c1onn).

ScéΔt, story (originally Neut.)—D.A.N.—scéΔt. V.G.

scé1t—So :—éΔn, bird ; néΔt, cloud ; ʃear, grass.

Genitive—ém, né1t, ʃé1r.

folc, hair.—Sg. D.A.N. folc. V.G. fuilc. So :—
cnoc, hill ; son, sound ; poll, hole ; tor, bush.
V.G. cnuic, sun, puill, tuir.

iasc, fish. Sg. D.A.N.—iasc. V.G. éisc. But rian,
track (G. ríain) ; srían, bridle (G. sríain) ; brian,
Brian (G. bríain) ; bíad, food (G. bíò) ; diabhal,
devil (G. diabhal).

leastar, cask, helpless person.—Sg.—D.A.N. leastar.
V.G. leastair. So :—claróeam, sword ; solas,
light ; sólás, consolation ; ainígeal, angel ; bócar,
road. V.G.—claróim, solais, sóláis, ainíle, bócar.

Nouns ending in -ac, -eac have -aig, -ig in V.G. Thus :—

uatac, burden. Sg. D.A.N.—uatac. V.G. uataig.
So :—aonac, fair ; mullac, summit ; beatac, path ;
éadac, cloth ; órlac, inch. V.G.—aonag, mullag,
beataig, éadag, órlag.

sa, spear, dart, sting, beam, belongs to this declen-
sion. G. sa, sae, saoi. N.A. pl. saoi, saete, saote.
G. pl. sac, saete. D. pl. saoi, saetib.

coileac, cock.—Sg. D.A.N. coileac. V.G. coilig.
So :—mairtíneac, cripple. V.G. mairtínig.

mac, son. Sg. D.A.N.—mac, V.G. mic (O.I. maic ;
mid. I. meic).

leamb, child. Sg. D.A.N.—leamb, V.G. leimb.

Plural.

12.—	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
fean .—	fíar	fean	fearaib	a feara
Ceann	cinn	ceann	ceannaib	a ceanna
Scéal	scéala	scéal	scéalaib	a scéala
folc .—	fuilc	folc	folcaib	a folca
iasc .—	éisc	iasc	iascaib	a iasca
leastar .—	leastair	leastar	leastruib	a leastra
Claróeam .—	claróimte	claróeam	claróimtib	a claróimte
Solas .—	soillse	soillse	soillsib	a soillse
Sólás .—	sóláis	sólás	sólásaib	a sólása
Ainígeal .—	ainíle	ainígeal	ainíleib	a ainíle
Bócar .—	bóicre	bócar	bóicrib	(a bóicre)

	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
uálaċ.—	uálaige	uálaċ	uálaigib	Δ uálaige
ḁonaċ.—	ḁonaige	ḁonaċ	ḁonaigib	(Δ ḁonaige)
beálaċ.—	beálaige	beálaċ	beálaigib	(Δ beálaige)
éadaċ.—	éadaige	éadaċ	éadaigib	(Δ éadaige)
órlaċ.—	órlaige	órlaċ	órlaigib	(Δ órlaige)
Coileac.—	coilig	coileac	coileacab	Δ coileaca
mac.—	mic	mac	macab	Δ maca
leanb.—	leanbái	leanb	leanbáb	Δ leanbái

13.—Note.—Scéala, news ; scéalta, stories ; clárómte, soillse, aingle, bóitre ; uálaige, ḁonaige, beálaige, éadaige, órlaige ; mic, leanbái.

14.—uálaċ, ḁonaċ, beálaċ, éadaċ, órlaċ form their pl. in -aige under the influence of teac, a Neut. s- stem. O.I. pl. tige. Forms enclosed within brackets (12) occur only rarely.

15.—N.B.—Ōia, God, belongs to this declension. (Lat.—deus, divus). G. sg.—Ōé. V.—Δ Ōia. Pl.—Ōéite.

16.—Many nouns which originally belonged to this declension have passed into others :—Scát, shadow ; urcóro, harm ; ḁois, age ; trian, a third ; seor, seoro, jewel. G. now—scátta (3rd), urcóroe (2nd), ḁoise (2nd), triana (3rd), seoro (1st), seoro (2nd), seorda (3rd). Deamán, demon, has N.A. pl. deamna (O.I. demn(a)e) owing to Lat. daemonia (*Thurn.*). But deamán also occurs in mod. I.

17.—The Dual :—Used after ōá, two. It is (with rare exceptions) the same in form as the D. sg., and does not change for case. E.g., ōá fear, two men. Ōá *aspirates*.—Ōá ceann, iasc, leastar, clárdeam, solas, bótar, 7rl. The G. pl. is sometimes used as G. Dual :—lán ōo ōá súl, the full of your two eyes (Súl is 2nd and 3rd declension).

18.—Many nouns in -ab, owing to the loss (in speech) of the final -b, pass into the 4th declension in the pl. Thus :—iongna(b), wonder ; maora(b), dog ; slabra(b),

chain ; *marḡa(ṑ)*, bargain, market. Pl.—*ionḡnaí*, *maṑraí*, *slaḡraí*, *marḡaí*. Note the pl.—*ṑóirṑe* (*ṑoras*, door), *éiḡse* (*éiḡeas*, learned man).

19.—Plurals in *-a* :—*caor*, berry ; *ṑeor*, tear ; *ṑocal*, word ; *ṑiaḡ*, debt ; *bruac*, brink ; *scéal*, story ; *meacan*, parsnip ; *peann*, pen ; *seṑ*, jewel ; *slán*, surety. Pl.—*caora*, *ṑeora*, *ṑocla* (also *ṑocail*), *ṑiaḡa*, *bruacḡa*, *scéala* (news), *meacna*, *peanna* (also *pinn*), *seṑa* (see 16), *slána*.

20.—Plurals in *-ta*, *-ṑta* :—*ceol*, music ; *ṑán*, poem ; *ṑún*, fort ; *néal*, cloud ; *seol*, sail ; *coḡaṑ*, war ; *cuan*, harbour ; *céaṑ*, hundred ; *scéal*, story ; *líon*, net. Pl. *ceolta*, *ṑánta*, *ṑúnta*, *néalta*, *seolta*, *coḡta*, *cuaṑta*, *céaṑta* (but *céaṑ* after numerals :—*trí céaṑ*, *seacht ḡcéaṑ*, 300, 700), *scéalta* (but *scéala*=news), *líonta*. *Coḡaṑ* comes from *cat*, battle (*u-* stem) with the prep. con- prefixed.

SECOND DECLENSION.

21.—All nouns of this declension end, in N. sg., in a broad or slender consonant. All are F.—

		V.A.N.	G.	D.
Cos ,	foot.—	<i>cos</i>	<i>coise</i>	<i>cois</i>
ṑrós ,	shoe.—	<i>brós</i>	<i>bróise</i>	<i>bróis</i>
long ,	ship	<i>long</i>	<i>luṑge</i>	<i>luṑḡ</i>
clann ,	children.—	<i>clann</i>	<i>clainne</i>	<i>clainn</i>
ḡrian ,	sun.—	<i>ḡrian</i>	<i>ḡréine</i>	<i>ḡréin</i>
ṑian ,	pain.—	<i>ṑian</i>	<i>ṑéine</i>	<i>ṑéin</i>
scian ,	knife.—	<i>scian</i>	<i>scine</i>	<i>scin</i> (<i>sciam</i>)
ciall ,	sense.—	<i>ciall</i>	<i>céille</i>	<i>céill</i>
ḡéaḡ ,	branch.—	<i>ḡéaḡ</i>	<i>ḡéise</i>	<i>ḡéis</i>
ṑréam ,	root	<i>ṑréam</i>	<i>ṑréime</i>	<i>ṑréim</i>
spéar ,	sky.—	<i>spéar</i>	<i>spéire</i>	<i>spéir</i> .

22.—

lil ,	lily.—	<i>lil</i>	<i>lile</i>	<i>lil</i>
luib ,	herb.—	<i>luib</i>	<i>luibe</i>	<i>luib</i>
ṑuais ,	prize.—	<i>ṑuais</i>	<i>ṑuaise</i>	<i>ṑuais</i>
áit ,	place.—	<i>áit</i>	<i>áite</i>	<i>áit</i> .

23.—Nouns in **-eac̃**, **-ac̃**, have **-iḡe**, **-aiḡe** in G., and **-iḡ**, **-aiḡ** in D.—

	V.A.N.	G.	D.
Caillēac̃ , hag.—	caillēac̃	caillēḡe	caillēḡ
blāc̃ac̃ , buttermilk.—	blāc̃ac̃	blāc̃aiḡe	blāc̃aiḡ
lāc̃ac̃ , mud, mire.—	lāc̃ac̃	lāc̃aiḡe	lāc̃aiḡ

But note the monosyllabic nouns :—

beac̃ , bee.—	V.A.N. beac̃.	G. beice.	D. beic̃
sceac̃ , briar.—	„ sceac̃	„ sceice	„ sceic̃
creac̃ , plunder.—	„ creac̃	„ creice	„ creic̃

24.—Syncope often takes place in G.sg.—**buirēan**, company ; **bruigēan**, palace. G.—**buirēne**, **bruigēne**.

25.—**Deoc̃**, drink.—V.A.N. **deoc̃**. G. **oḡe** D. **oḡ**
muc, pig.— „ **muc** „ **muice** „ **muic̃**

26.—**ḡo**, lie, deceit (now 4th declension, G. **ḡo**) originally belonged to this declension (O.I. G. sg., **gue**). **toit**, will (G. now **toite**, **toia**. O.I. G. **tuile**) ; **ḡabál** (and all verbals in **-ál**), O.I. **gabál**, G. **-ae**, now G. **-a** (3rd) ; **pearsa** (G. now **-n** (5th), originally N. **persan**, G. **persine** (L. **persona**) ; **litir** (orig. **á-** stem, L. **litera**), G. now **litre**, **litreac̃**, Pl. **litre**, **litreac̃a** (due to K-stems).

27.—

Plural.

	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
Cos , foot.—	cosa	cos	cosaib̃	Δ cosa
bróḡ .—	bróḡa	bróḡ	bróḡaib̃	Δ bróḡa
long .—	longa	long	longaib̃	Δ longa
clann .—	clanna	clann	clannaib̃	Δ clanna
ḡrian .—	ḡriana	ḡrian	ḡrianaib̃	Δ ḡriana
pian .—	pianca	pianca	piancaib̃	Δ pianca
scian .—	sciana	scian	sceanaib̃	Δ sceana
ciall .—	—	—	—	—
ḡéaḡ .—	ḡéaḡa	ḡéaḡ	ḡéaḡaib̃	Δ ḡéaḡa
fréam̃ .—	fréam̃a(ca)	fréam̃(ača)	fréam̃ačaib̃	Δ fréam̃ača
spéar .—	spéarta	spéarta	spéartaib̃	Δ spéarta
lil .—	lile	lil	lilib̃	Δ lile

	N.A.	G.	D.	V.
luib. —	luibeanna	luibeann(Δ)	luibeannaibh	Δ luibeanna
duais. —	duaiseanna	duaiseann(Δ)	duaiseannaibh	Δ duaiseanna
áit. —	áiteanna(-ača)	áiteann	áiteannaibh	Δ áiteanna
cailleac. —	cailleacha	cailleac	cailleachaibh	Δ cailleacha
beac. —	beacha	beac	beachaibh	Δ beacha
sceac. —	sceacha	sceac	sceachaibh	Δ sceacha
creac. —	creacha	creac	creachaibh	Δ creacha
deoc. —	deocha	deoc	deochaibh	Δ deocha
muc. —	muca	muc	mucaibh	Δ muca.

28.—The Dual.—(Same in form, in all cases, as D. sg.).
(An dá) cois, bróis, luing, céill, géis, fréimh, spéir, lil, luib, duais, áit, cailleis, beic, sceic, creic, óis, muc.

29.—**bean**, a woman.—N.A. pl.—mná. G. ban. D. mnáibh. V. Δ mná. N.B.—This noun, and the F. of the article are the only Δ-stems that follow the original declension. The G. sg. in -e in the 2nd declension is irregular.

30.—Note the *strong* plurals in -anna, -acha :—
Cúis, cause (cúiseanna) ; béim, stroke (béimeanna) ; gtuais, contrivance (gtuaiseanna) ; veit, lathe (veiteanna) ; léim, leap (léimeanna) ; scoil, school (scoileanna) ; céim, step (céimeanna) ; feis, festival (feiseanna) ; sráir, street (sráireanna) ; páirc, field (páirceanna) ; uair, hour, time (uaireanna, uaireanna) ; of these, béim, céim, léim, réim, were nn-stems, and belong by right to the 5th declension. Scol, scoil, has also a pl. scoltača (U.).

31.—Plurals in -acha, -eacha :—

litir, letter ; obair, work ; paoir, prayer ; óráir, speech ; ub, egg ; ciúmais, edge ; truaill, scabbard ; leac, stone ; coiscéir, fortnight ; aibí, habit, costume.

THIRD DECLENSION.

32.—This declension includes :—

(a) M. nouns in -óir, -dóir, -adóir, -úir, -neoir :—
bádóir, boatman ; físeadóir, weaver ; doctúir, doctor ; tálúir, tailor ; scríobneoir, writer.

(b) Abstracts, Collectives, and others, in -**ᾰḱτ**. All F. except **ῥᾰḱτ**, cold, M. and monosyllabic nouns like **ceᾰḱτ**, lesson; **céᾰḱτ**, plough; **τᾰᾰḱτ**, river bank; **reᾰḱτ**, statute. **Teᾰḱτ**, coming, and **bannτᾰḱτ**, women-folk, are M. and F.

(c) Other nouns ending in consonants (M. or F., as a rule, according as the final consonant is broad or slender). Names of males, however, are M.—**lᾰᾰḱḡ**, physician, surgeon.

33.—I- stems in O.I. (as in Lat.) were M., F. or Neuter. U- stems (as in Lat.) were M. or Neuter.

EXAMPLES.

34 (a).—

ḃᾰḃóir .—N.A.V.D.	ḃᾰḃóir	G. ḃᾰḃóra .
ῥᾰḡeᾰḃóir „	ῥᾰḡeᾰḃóir „	ῥᾰḡeᾰḃóra
ḃoḱtúir .— „	ḃoḱtúir „	ḃoḱtúra
τᾰᾰllᾰúir .— „	τᾰᾰllᾰúir „	τᾰᾰllᾰúra
Scriḃneoir .— „	Scriḃneoir „	Scriḃneora

35 (b).—

ḃeannaḱτ .—N.A.V.D.	ḃeannaḱτ	G. ḃeannaḱta
maḡlaḱτ .— „	maḡlaḱτ „	maḡlaḱta
ῥᾰḱτ .— „	ῥᾰḱτ „	ῥᾰḱta .

36 (c).—

Cnám , bone (M)	N.A.V.D.	cnám	G. cnáma
ḡníom , deed (M)	„	ḡníom „	ḡníoma
ruḃ , thing (M)	„	ruḃ „	ruḃa
reann , star (M)	„	reann „	reanna .

37 (d).—

ῥᾰil , blood (F)	N.A.V.D.	ῥᾰil	G. ῥola
ῥeoil , flesh (F)	„	ῥeoil „	ῥeola
τᾰám , multitude (F)	„	τᾰám „	τᾰána
muir , sea (M.F.)	„	muir „	mara (orig. Neuter)
lᾰᾰḱḡ , physician (M)	„	lᾰᾰḱḡ „	leᾰḡa .

38.—

bíť,	world	(M)	N.A.V.D.	bíť	G. beaťa
řios,	knowledge	(M)	„	řios	„ řeasa
lios,	fort	(M)	„	lios	„ leasa
leas,	improvement	(M)	„	leas	„ leasa
cíť,	shower	(M)	„	cíť	„ ceaťa
cuíť,	share	(F)	„	cuíť	„ coťa
críos,	girdle	(M)	„	críos	„ creasa
đruim,	back	(M)	„	đruim	„ đroma
đrom,	human back	(M)	„	đrom	„ đroma
říť,	running	(F)	„	říť	„ reaťa
řioť,	tree, wood ((M)	„	řioť	„ řeaoťa.

39.—**Cró** (G. *id.* F.), gore, blood, death (O.I. *crú*, G. *cró*) ; and **cnó**, nut, M. or F. (G. *id.*, Pl. *cná*, *cnóite* ; O.I. *cnú*, G. *cnó*, F.) belong to this declension, the ending being obscured by the long vowel.

40.—Changes :—

řraiř, F., rafters (O.I. G. *frega*, wall, partition). G. now **řraiře**. Pl. **řrařťaťa**.

řraiř, F., stud of horses (O.I. G. *grega*). G. now **řraiře**.

ťailm, F., sling (O.I. G. *telma*). G. now **ťailme**. Pl. **ťailmeaťa**.

đorus, M., door (O.I. Neut. G. *doirse*). G. now **đoruís**. Pl. **đóirse**.

amus, M., hit, etc. (O.I. G. *aimseo*). G. now **amuís**.

ťómuś, M., guess, riddle (<*to-fo-mess. O.I. G. *toimseo*, now **ťómuís**).

líon, M., number, etc. (O.I. G. *lina*, now **lín**).

41.—**řníomaraťa**, used as N. pl. of **řníom**, is really the pl. of **řníomrať** (Collective), deeds. Cf. **connaraťa**, compacts, covenants, pl. of **connrať**.

Plural.

42.—	đáđóir	řiřeađóir	đoťťúir	scribneoir
V.A.N.G.	đáđóirí	řiřeađóirí	đoťťúirí	scribneoirí
D.	đáđóiríđ	řiřeađóiríđ	đoťťúiríđ	scribneoiríđ

43.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
beannaċt. —	beannaċta	beannaċt	beannaċtaib
mallact. —	mallacta	mallact	mallactaib
Cnáin. —	cnáina	cnáin	cnáinaib
ḡníom. —	ḡníomarta	ḡníomarta	ḡníomartaib
Rud. —	rudai	rudai	rudaiib
Reann. —	reanna	reann	reannaib

44.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
ṭáin. —	ṭáinte	ṭáinte	ṭáinteib
muir. —	muire	muir	muirib
líaiḡ. —	leaiḡa	líaiḡ	leaiḡaib
lios. —	leasa	lios	leasaib
Ciċ. —	ceatana	ceatana	ceatanaib
Cuid. —	coḡaċa	coḡaċa	coḡaċaib
Críos	creasa	críos	creasaib
Ḍruim (ḏrom)	ḏromanna	ḏromanna	ḏromannaib

FOURTH DECLENSION.

45.—This includes :—

(a) Personal nouns in —aíre (—uáire), —aíre (—íre), —all M.

(b) Diminutives in —ín. All M.— Originally o— stems (1st declension).

(c) Abstracts in —e, formed from adjectives. All F. nowadays.

(d) All nouns ending in vowels, except ḡia, ḡa (1st decl.) ; cró, cnó (3rd decl.), and those which belong to the 5th decl. (consonantal stems).

(e) Note especially that *lá*, day (G. *lae*, Poet. *laoi*, D. *lá*, *ló*) and *ó*, *ua*, grandson (V.G. *uí*, N.A. pl. *uí*) belong to this declension, and are the only nouns that preserve traces, in the sg., of the original inflections.

EXAMPLES.

Singular.

46.—(a) **ḡadaíre**, thief, M. **ṭeaċtaire**, messenger, M.

(b) **Caíín**, girl, M. **báidín**, little boat. M.

(c) **Déine**, ardour, intensity, F. **Óige**, youth. F.

(d) **Croíðe**, heart, M. **Duine**, person, M. **ƒiaðónaise**, testimony, F. **Oíðce**, night, F. **Aiðne**, acquaintance, F. **ré**, life, time, space, F.

47.—All the nouns in these classes (46) are *the same in all cases in the sg.*,—except with regard to aspiration and eclipsis. **lá** and **ó** are inflected as indicated in 45 (e).

Plural.

48. **ḡaḡaíðe**.—V.A.N.G.—**ḡaḡaíðte**. D.—**ḡaḡaíðtíð**. So all nouns with this termination, and others ending in **—ðe**, **—ḡe**, e.g., **croíðe**, heart, **uḡe**, forearm. Pl.—**croíðte**, **uḡte**.

teacḡtaire.—V.A.N.G.—**teacḡtaí**. D.—**teacḡtaíð**. So **teacḡtaí**, etc.

caílin.—V.A.N.G.—**caíliní**. D.—**caíliníð**. So all nouns in **—ín**.

Déine, ḡrl.—These abstracts are not used in the pl.

Duine.—V.A.N.G.—**ḡaḡme**. D.—**ḡaḡmíð**.

Oíðce.—V.A.N.G.—**oíðceanta** (following **laeteanta**, pl. of **lá**, day). Also **oíðcí**, and (in Donegal) **—anna**.

Aiðne, commandment—V.A.N.G.—**aíteanta**. D.—**aíteantaíð**.

ré.—V.A.N.G.—**réite**. D.—**réitíð**.

Reite, ram.—V.A.N.G.—**reití**. D.—**reitíð**.

lá.—V.A.N.G.—**laete**, **láite**, **laeteanta**. D.—**laetíð**, **láitíð**, **laeteantaíð**.

ó, ua.—V.A.N.—**uí**. G.—**ó, ua**. D.—**uíð** (often used for N. in place names, e.g., **uíð laḡḡaire**).

49.—Plurals in **—te** :—In addition to the nouns specified in 48 (under **ḡaḡaíðe**) the following add **—te** :—**Caḡ**, way, etc. F. ; **ḡaḡ**, fool, M. ; **ḡraḡ**, druid, M. ; **ḡlaḡ**, curl, F. ; **laḡ**, lay, F. ; **ƒinné**, witness, M. ; **míle**, thousand, mile, M. (but after numerals the pl. is **míle**,—O.I. **mili**—**trí míle**, **seacḡ míle**, 3,000, 7,000) ;

ré, life, F. ; n1, thing, M. ; sΔ01, sage, M. Of these
 ʋΔ01, sΔ01, ʋRΔ01 are properly consonantal stems.
 Plurals :—cΔ01te, ʋΔ01te, ʋRΔ01te, ʋlΔ01te, lΔ01te,
 f1nnéte, m1lte, réite, neite (n1r0te), sΔ01te.

50.—Plurals in —te :—léme, shirt, F., baite, town,
 M., stoinne, surname, M., teime, fire, F., cúinne, corner,
 M. Pl.—léimte (also léimteΔΔ), baite (also baiteí,
 baiteΔΔ), stoinnte, teimte (also teimteΔΔ), cúimnte
 (also cúinní).

51.—múitte, mule, M.—Pl.—múitti, múitte.

ʒnó, work, M.—Pl.—ʒnóΔΔ, ʒnóΔái.

uinge, ounce, ingot, F.—Pl.—umgeΔΔΔ.

easna, rib, lath, F.—Pl.—easnaí, easnaΔΔ,
 easnar0eΔΔΔ.

FIFTH DECLENSION.

52.—We have in Irish stems ending in :—1° τ- or ʋ-.
 2° c-. 3° ʒ-. 4° n-. 5° nn-. 6° -nτ (>ʋ). 7° r. 8° -s.

In 1°—6°, the characteristic consonant of the stem
 disappears in the N. sg. (except in ʋéΔʋ, tooth, teeth),
 but generally reappears in the G. sg., so that we have
 the syllables -Δʋ, -Δc, -ʒ (rí0ʒ), -Δn, -Δnn, -Δʋ (from -ant),
 serving in mod. I. as G. endings. The original G. ending
 is lost. In 7° the characteristic consonant (-r) appears
 in *all* the cases ; while in 8°, it (-s) *disappears* in all
 (except mí, month, G. míosa. Here it is preserved by
 the originally preceding -n).

T. and D. Stems.

Singular.

53.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
teangΔ, tongue, F.—	teangΔ	teangΔʋ	teangΔ1ʋ
ʒleo, strife, noise, M.—	ʒleo	ʒl1Δʋ	ʒl1Δ1ʋ
sΔ01, sage, M.—	sΔ01	suΔʋ	sΔ01
ʋRΔ01, druid, magician, M.—	ʋRΔ01	ʋRuΔʋ	ʋRΔ01
cré, earth, dust, clay, F.—	cré	cr1Δʋ	cr1Δ1ʋ
ʋé, spark, dust, smoke, F.—	ʋé	ʋ1Δʋ	ʋ1Δ1ʋ.

G. now mostly *deíte*. 1 *noeire na deíte*—at the point of death.

Cion, sin, fault, M. and F.—V.A.N. *cion*. G. *cionad*. D. *cionaid*.

54.—Many of these stems have passed over to the 4th declension :—*Teanga*, *teime*, *pile*, *léime*. *Troig*, foot, F., has now G. in *-e*, or *-te*. All these nouns show the original nature of the stem in the pl., where the dental appears :—*teangta*, *teinte*, *píli* (from *píleada*), *léintea*, *troigte*. *Míle*, soldier, orig. G. *mílead* (Lat. miles, milit-is) has now passed over to the 1st decl. N.—*mílead*, G. *mílr*.

C (K-) Stems.

55.—	V.A.N.	G.	D.
CAṬAIR , city, F.	<i>caṭair</i>	<i>caṭrac</i>	<i>caṭair</i> (<i>caṭraiḡ</i>)
NAṬAIR , snake, F.	<i>naṭair</i>	<i>naṭrac</i>	<i>naṭair</i> (<i>naṭraiḡ</i>)
CRÁIN , female, sow, F.	<i>cráin</i>	<i>crána</i>	<i>cráin</i> (<i>cránaḡ</i>)
CAORA , sheep, ewe, F.	<i>caora</i>	<i>caora</i>	<i>caora</i> (<i>caoiriḡ</i>)
SAIL , willow, beam, F.	<i>sail</i>	<i>sala</i>	<i>sail</i> (<i>sailiḡ</i>)
Ceo , mist, M.	<i>ceo</i>	<i>ciac</i>	now <i>ceo</i> (<i>ceoiḡ</i>)

56.—Many nouns not originally belonging to this declension have been attracted to it, especially in the pl. Thus :—*Ḍair*, oak, F., has G. sg. *ḍaire*, *ḍarac*, *ḍaraḡe* ; *Teamair*, Tara, G. *teamrac* (O.I.G. *Temro*) ; *caṭaoir*, chair, G. *caṭaoireac* (A. pl. in P.H. p. 163 *cathaire*) ; *ail*, cliff, F. (G. *aille*) has pl. *ailtrea*, as well as *aille* ; so *atair*, *mátair*, *brátair*, *ḍriotáir*, *siúr*, *ḍriofúr* (*deirbhsíúr*), all of them *r*-stems, have pl. *aitrea*, *maîtrea*, *bráitrea*, *ḍriotáireac*, *siúra*, *deirbhséara*. The mod. *sceac*, G. *sceice* (23), however, was, in early Irish, N. *scé*, G. *sciac*. For other plurals in *-aca* see 30.

G- Stems.

57.—**rí**, King, M.—N.A.V. *rí*. G. *riog*. D. *riḡ*. In the sg., however, *ḡ* usually disappears, so that all cases are *rí*. N. pl. *riḡte*. **brí**, a hill, M. N.A.V. *brí*. G. *breaḡ*. D. *bríḡ*.

N- Stems.

58.—V.A.N. **Cú**, hound, F. (M. in O.I.). G. con.
D. com.

„ **eascú**, eel. G. eascon. D. eascom.

„ **bró**, quern, F. G. brón. D. bróin.

„ **breiteam**, judge M. G. breiteamán
(breitím). D. breiteamán (breiteam).

ḡobnait (Girl's name); **naoiðe**, babe, M.F.; **talam**, earth, M.F.; **múma**, Munster, F.; **Alba**, Scotland, F. also belong to this declension.

teansa (53) and **pearsa** (orig. a- stem) have been attracted to this declension. G. teansan, pearsan.
D. teansam, pearsam.

NN- Stems.

59.—

V.A.N.—**brú**, womb, F. G. bronn D. bruinn

„ —**éire**, Ireland, F. „ éireann „ éirinn

„ —**ḡual**, shoulder, F. „ ḡualann „ ḡualainn.

Like these are declined—**abla**, Host, F.; **ḡabla**, smith, M.; **abla**, river, F.; **oile**, deluge, F.

60.—The old Neuters :—**aimm**, M.F., **béim**, F., **céim**, M.F., **léim**, F., **réim**, F., **ḡreim**, M., **tuitim**, F., **naðom**, F. (mostly **snaðom**, F., now), **maðom**, M.F., **seinnm**, M., **ḡairm**, F. **foḡlum**, F., belonged originally to this declension. Owing to a short G. ending (-s, instead of -os) they dropped -nn in G. sg. which is now :—**aimme**, **béime**, **céime**, **léime**, **réime**, **ḡreama**, **tuitme**, **naðoma** (**snaðome**), **maðoma**, **seanma** (**seinme**), **ḡarma**, **foḡluma**. They are generally put in 2nd or 3rd declension, but they are nn- stems, and -nn- generally appears in the pl.—**aimmanna** (**aimmneada**), **béimeanna**, **céimeanna**, **léimeanna**, **réimeanna**, **ḡreamanna**, **naðomanna**, **maðomanna**, **ḡarmanna**. **Tuitim**, **seinnm**, **foḡlum** do not occur in pl. **im**, butter, M. (G. ime) and **míor**, portion, F. (G. míre; Pl. **míoranna**) also belong to this declension.

61.—Many of the nouns in 59 tend to use D. sg. as N. and inflect according to 2nd declension. V.A.N.D. *bromn*, *ablainn*, *abainn*, *oílinn*. G. *bromne* (*bruinne*), *ablainne*, *abainne*, *oílinne*.

62.— NT- Stems.

N.A.V.—*CARA*, friend, M.F. G. *carao* D. *caraid*
 „ —*ficé*, twenty, F. „ *ficéao* „ *ficíao*
 „ —*náma*, enemy, M.F. „ *námao* „ *námair*
 „ —*deao*, tooth, teeth, M. „ *deíao* (Orig. Neut. Now 1st declension)
 „ —*nuao* (Proper Name) „ *nuaoat* ($\tau=\sigma$).
más nuaoat, Maynooth.

63.— R- Stems.

V.A.N.D.—*atair*, father, M. G. *atar*.
 „ —*maíair*, mother, F. G. *máatar*.
 „ —*brátair*, kinsman, friar, M. G. *bráatar*.
 „ —*orioáir*, brother, M. G. *orioáar*.
 „ —*siúr*, sister, female relative, nun, F. G. *seatar* (*siúire*, *siúra*, *seatrae*. D. sometimes *siair*).
 „ —*oripíúr* (= *deirbhsíúr*), sister, F. G. *oripéar* (*deirbseatar*).

64.— S- Stems.

(V.)A.N.D.—*slia*, mountain, M. G. *sléibe*.
 (V.)A.N. —*teac*, house, M. „ *tiġe*. D. *tiġ*.
 (V.)A.N. —*más*, plain, F. „ *muġe* (*maġe*).
 D. *muġ*.
 V.A.N. —*leac*, side, F. „ *leite*. D. *leit*.
 „ —*uġ* (Munster *uġ*), egg, F. G. *uġe* (*uibe*).
 D. *uġ* (*uib*).

In Munster generally M. G. *uib*.

V.A.N.D.—*steann*, glen, M. G. *steanna* (O.I. *glinne*).
 „ —*neam*, sky, heaven, F. G. *neime*, *nime*.

clú, fame, M.F. (G. *clú*), and *gné*, species, F. (G. *gné*) are s- stems. O.I. G. *gnee*, *clua*=*cluae*).

Plural of Consonantal Stems.

65.—Consonantal stems form their pl.—(a) By attenuating the G. sg. (b) By adding -a to G. sg. (c) By adding -e to G. sg. (d) Some by adding -i. (e) Some by adding -ada, -anna, -te, or -ta.

66.—Outside s- stems (which in O.I. had pl. in -e), and neuter nn- stems (which had N. pl. in -nn), the N. pl. ended in a slender consonant (method a). The other methods are due, partly to s- stems, and partly to confusion between the N. pl. and the A. pl. (which latter, except in neuter nn- stems, ended in a vowel in O.I.).

67 (a).—Pl. in a slender consonant :—

Cú, N. pl. cum (cona, comte, cumte). G. con. D. conaib
CAORA, N. pl. caoiriḡ. G. caorač. D. caoračaib
LAČA, N. pl. lačam. G. lačan. D. lačanaib
ŕice, N. pl. ŕicir (ŕicirí). G. ŕicea. D. ŕiceaib
 (ŕiciríib).
Cómursa, N. pl. cómursam (Or -na). G. cómursan.
 D. cómursanaib.
breiteam, N. pl. breiteamam (breitím). G. breiteamán.
 D. breiteamnaib.

68 (b).—Plurals in -a :—

pearsa, N. pl. pearsana. G. pearsan. D. pearsanaib.
naoibé, N. pl. naoiréana. G. naoiréan. D. naoiréanaib.
Ceo, mist (G. sg. ciac, ceoḡ). N. pl. ceoča.
 Also—cómursana, máḡa, míosa.

69 (c).—Plurals in -e :—

CARA, N. pl. cáirde ; náma, náimre ; ḡaba, ḡaibne ;
 ḡuala, ḡaibne ; ada, aibne.

70 (d).—Plurals in -i :—ada, aibní ; abla, ablainní
 (ablanna) ; ŕicé, ŕicirí ('na bŕiciríib, in scores).

71 (e).—Strong Plurals :—Teac, tigte (O.I. tige) ;
 ri, riḡte (O.I. A. rioga) ; ačair, aicreac, etc. (see 56) ;

CAṬAOIR, CAṬAOIREACĀ ; TEANGA, TEANGTACĀ ; SAOI, SAOIṬE ;
 ṬRAOI, ṬRAOIṬE ; CION, fault, M.F., CIONTA (these last
 four were dental stems) ; AIMM, AIMMNEACĀ ; CRÉ, earth,
 F. (G. sg. CRÍAR, D. CRÍAR. But, in modern prose,
 G.D. CRÉ) CRÉIRĒANNA ; TEINE, TEINTE ; FÍLE, FÍLÍ (O.I.
 filid, later fílrōe, and so fílí) ; LÉINE, shirt, F., LÉIN-
 TEACĀ ; CEO, CEOṬANNA (also regular CEOĀ, A c- stem) ;
 BRÓ, BRÓINTE (*double pl.* An n- stem) ; TALAM, TALMÁINTE
 (*double pl.*) TALINTE, TALTA ; BÉIM, BÉIMEANNA (and many
 others. See 60. Final a irregular) ; SLIAB, SLÉIBTE
 (O.I. slé(i)be) ; GLEANN, GLEANNTA (O.I. glinne), GLEANNTAÍ
 (Ulster) ; LEAT, side (s- stem), LEATANNA, LEITEANNA ;
 UṢ (uḃ), UIḢEACĀ, UIḢEACĀ. Also, regular, UIḢE, UIḢE
 (s- stem) ; TÍR, TÍORTĀ.

72.—These endings— -ANA, -ANNA, -ACĀ, -TE, -TA
 (-ṬE, -ṬĀ), -ANNTA, -TEACĀ, -Í—are due to the influence
 of n-, nn-, c- and dental stems. The endings -ANNTA,
 -TEACĀ are combinations of -ANN and -TA, and of -TE and
 -ACĀ respectively. They have made their way not only
 into the declension of vocalic stems, but interchange
 amongst the consonantal stems themselves. Thus :—

- (a) ṬE, ṬĀ, TA are attached to s- stems : TIGTE, TÍORTĀ,
 SLÉIBTE, GLEANNTA ; and to n- stems : BRÓINTE,
 TALMÁINTE.
- (b) ACĀ (properly belonging to c- stems) is attached
 to :—1° r- stems : AITREACĀ, MÁITREACĀ, etc. 2°
 Dental stems :—LÉINTEACĀ, TEANGTACĀ. 3° The
 s- stem UṢ, uḃ, UIḢEACĀ UIḢEACĀ. 4° nn- stems :
 AIMMNEACĀ.
- (c) -ANA, -ANNA (from n- and nn- stems) are attached
 to—1° c- stems : CEOṬANNA (the ṱ is only “padding”
 between vowels). 2° t- and d- stems : CRÉIRĒANNA.
 3° s- stems : LEATANNA, MÍONNA (mÍOSA).
- (d) -Í (from dental stems, rō, rōe, í) is attached to—
 1°. The nt- stem FÍCE, pl. FÍCRÓÍ (FÍCRÓ, regular). 2°
 The nn- stems, ABĀ, ABĪĀ, pl. AIBNNÍ, ABĪAINNÍ.
- (e) In Rathlin Irish plurals in -AN, -EAN, -ANN, are
 common with all stems :—

τὰ μο ἐκρίθε βρῖστε, βρούτε,
 ἰς τὴν νὰ θεοῖρ ἃ κίτ̃ ὅ μο σῦλεαν (C-Ć.U. 102),—
 My heart is bruised and broken, and frequent tears have
 run from my eyes.

So also :—βρόσαν (a- stem), cáirdean (nt- stem),
 βάταν (io- stem), mnán, women (a- stem), fearann
 (o- stem), etc.

73. A unique *diphthongal* stem is βό, cow, F. Sg.
 V.A.N.G. βό. D. bum (due to com). Pl. N.A.V. βά.
 G. βό. D. βυάιβ.

74 (a).—The G. pl. of consonantal stems is often the
 same as G. sg.—except in neut. nn- stems, and s- stems,
 which lose the characteristic consonant in G. sg. R-
 stems are also different, because they take -άδα in the
 pl. N. plurals in -άδα, -αννα, -ανδ, -τέ, -τε, τδ, -τε, -ί,
 often retain these endings in the G. pl.

(b).—The D. pl. ends in :—1° -άιβ, when the N. pl.
 ends in -α, or in a slender consonant. 2° -ιβ, when N. pl.
 ends in -ε. 3° -ίβ, when N. pl. ends in -ί.

(c).—The V. pl. ends in :—1° -α, when D. pl. ends
 in -άιβ. 2° -ε, when D. pl. ends in -ιβ (-ιβ is replaced
 by -ε). 3° -ί, when N. pl. ends in -ί.

75.—Indeclinable nouns :—Some proper names like
 ἴοσα, παύραις, ἑκατόρ, Σιυβάν, Μυῖρις. Also the two
 common nouns, τοῖσα, choice (objective), ροῖσα, choice
 (subjective). In the line—"ἰς τὴν μο ροῖσιν τὰρ μνάιβ
 ἀν ὁμῶν" (L.O.), ροῖσιν is used for the sake of asso-
 nance with ὁμῶν.

76.—Μυῖνα, Munster, is an n- stem. υἱάιβ (N. pl.
 o- stem)=Ultonians ; λαιῖν (N. pl. o- stem)=Leinster
 men ; Conνάκτα (N. pl.)=Connaught-men. G. pl.
 υἱάιβ, λαιῖαν, Conνάκτ.

CHAPTER III.

THE ADJECTIVE (77—109).

77.—For the purpose of declension, adjectives, like nouns, are divided according to the nature of the stem. This gives us the following groups :—

First Declension :—Adjectives ending in a broad consonant. E.g.—*mór*, great, *ʒeal*, white, bright. These include :—(a) *o*— and *a*— stems, *mór*, *ʒeal*. (b) *u*— stems, like *oub*, black, *ptuc*, wet, *tiug*, thick. The dissyllabic *uasal*, *iseal*, *oileas*, *pollus*, have, in G.sg.F. and N.pl. *uaste*, *iste*, *oitse*, *poitse*, owing (in the pl.) to *i*- stems (O.I. *uaisli*, *isli*, *dilsli*). Instead of *oileas* we have also *oitis* (2nd decl.).

Second Declension :—Adjectives ending in a slender consonant, like *maic*, *oitis* (except those in —*amail*). These are all *i*—stems.

Third Declension :—Adjectives in —*amail*. Originally *i*— stems like *maic*, and declined like it. But O.I. *sainemlae* (G. sg. F. and G. pl.) and *sainemlai* (V.A.N. pl.) became *saineamla*, thus separating the two types. O.I. *maithi* (V.A.N. pl.) become *maice*.

Fourth Declension :—Adjectives ending in a vowel, including participles in —*ta*, —*te*, —*ta*, —*te*. These embrace (a) *io*—, —*ia* stems :—*oorca*, *uile*, *nua*, *cle*, *neamra*, *raua*, *oianta*, *rl*. (b) The *o*— stem *beo* (A trace of the old declension survives in *mac Dé B́i*, Son of the Living God).

“*nó a míc Dé B́i cia gní do oiair-sa dán*” (*Éamonn buí*)—Or who, O Son of the Living God, shall make a poem after you ? (the dead poet). With this exception, all these adjectives are uninflected in sg. and pl. In mod. I. the Dual in all adjectives is the same as the pl.

EXAMPLES.

78.—First Declension :—mór, great ; oileas, loyal, beloved.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.—D.A.N.—mór; oileas.	M.F.—V.A.N.D.—móra; oílse
V.G.—móir ; oílis.	G.—mór(Δ) ; oileas (oílse).
F.—V.A.N.—mór ; oileas.	{ Reamhar (ramhar), thick, stout, has pl. reamra (ram- ra). G.sg.F. reimre (ram- re). Gearr, short, G.sg.F. siorra. Pl. gearra.
G.—móire ; oílse.	
D.—móir ; oílis.	

N.B.—The D.pl. termination found in nouns is never, in mod. I., attached to adjectives, unless they are used as nouns. E.g.—bíod truaḡ aḡat do boḡtaib Oé—have pity on God's poor. But—bí truaḡ aḡam do sna (na) fearaib boḡta—I pitied the poor fellows. In the G.pl. there is a tendency to assimilate to the other cases—Uliam na mbuaḡaillimḡana—The Year of the Whiteboys.

79.—Second Declension :—maíḡ, good ; oílis, loyal, beloved.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.—V.A.N.D.G.—maíḡ, oílis.	M.F.—V.A.N.D.— maíḡe ; oílse.
F.—V.A.N.D.—maíḡ, oílis.	G.—maíḡ(e) ; oílis (oílse).
G.—maíḡe ; oílse.	

The adjectives deaḡair, difficult ; socair, easy ; cóir, right, have G.sg.F., and pl.—deaḡra, socra, córa. Seascair, comfortable, and fíadám, wild, have G.sg.F., and Pl. seascaire, fíadame (without syncope).

80.—Third Declension :—fearamail, manly ; banamail, womanly.

Sg.	Pl. and Dual.
M.F.—V.A.N.D.—fearamail, banamail.	fearamla, banamla.
G.—fearamla, banamla.	fearamail, banamail (or —amlΔ).

N.B.—The G.sg. in —Δ was originally F. only, the M. being in —aml.

81.—Fourth Declension :—With the exception noted above (77) there is no inflection whatever for gender, number or case. The adjective *te*, warm, was originally an *nt*-stem (Cf. Lat. *tepens*, *tepent*—). But, as no trace of the consonant now remains, it falls in with the *io*-stems. It has, however, *teo*, in G. sg. F., and in the pl.

82.—Many dissyllabic adjectives in the 2nd, and all in the 3rd declension (like *oileas*, *uasal*, in the 1st) are syncopated in the G. sg. F., and in the pl. E.g.—*deacair*, *deacra* ; *socair*, *socra* ; *mílís*, *mílse* ; *aoibinn*, *aoibne* ; *álúinn*, *áinne* (*áille*) ; and those in *-amail*, when *-a* is added. But note *fiadaine*, *seascaire*. *Breáḡ*, fine, has G. sg. F. *breaḡa*. Pl. *breaḡta*.

83.—Vowel-changes, due to attenuation, are the same as those which occur in nouns : (a) Monosyllabic adjectives with *-ea-* before the final consonant change *-ea-* into “*i*” or “*eí*” :—*ḡeal*, bright, G. sg. M. *ḡil*, F. *ḡile* ; *meall*, quick, *mírl*, *míre* ; *ceart*, right, *círl*, *círte* ; *beag*, little, *bíḡ*, *bíge* ; *ḡearr*, short, *ḡírr*, *ḡiorra*. But—*teann*, stern, *teinn*, *teinne* ; *deas*, pretty, *deis*, *deise* ; *dearg*, red, *deirḡ*, *deirge* ; *seasc*, barren, *seisc*, *seisce* ; *searb*, bitter, *seirb*, *seirbe* ; *seang*, slender, *seing*, *seinge* ; *leasc*, loth, *leisc*, *leisce* ; *tearc*, scarce, *teirc*, *teirce*.

(b) *o-* gives *uí-* :—*boḡ*, soft, *buíḡ*, *buíge* ; *trom*, heavy, *truim*, *truime* ; But—*boct*, poor, *boíct*, *boícte* ; *doct*, tight, hard, *doíct*, *doícte* ; *noct*, naked, *noíct*, *noícte*.

(c) *ia-* gives *éi-* :—*fiat*, generous, *féil*, *féile* ; *cian*, far, *cém*, *céme* ; *oian*, severe, *oém*, *oéme* ; *fiar*, awry, G. sg. F. *féire*.

(d) *iu-* gives *-i-* ; *-iú-* gives *-iúi-* :—*flúic*, wet, *flíc*, *flíce* ; *ciún*, calm (also *ciúm*), *ciúm*, *ciúme*. But *tiúḡ*, thick, dense, quick. G. sg. F. mostly *tiúḡa*.

(e) Final *-ac*, *-eac* become *-aíḡ*, *-aíge*, *-íḡ*, *-íge* :—*bacac*, lame, *bacacíḡ*, *bacacíge* ; *oíreach*, straight, —*oíríḡ*, *oíríge* ; *Sasanac*, English. G. sg. M., *Sasanacíḡ*.

(f) *-io-* becomes *-i-* ; *-íio-* becomes *-í-* :—*fionn*, fair, *finn*, *finne* ; *míon*, small, *-mín*, *mine* ; *críon*, withered, *crín*, *críne*.

Formation of Adjectives

84.—A.—By means of suffixes (added to nouns, adjectives, numerals, verb-roots, prepositions) :—1° *-ac* :—*Rómánac*, Roman ; *bacac*, lame ; *buíðeac*, thankful (<*buíðe*, good-will, thanks) ; *cuiðsac*, middling ; *ƿaitcíosac*, shy, fearful. 2° *-amail* :—*ƿearamail*, manly ; *banamail*, womanly ; *Críostamail*, Christ-like ; *maðamail*, mocking. 3° *-arðe*, *rðe* :—*Críostarðe*, Christian ; *beaðarðe*, sweetmouthed, fastidious ; *leanbarðe*, childish ; *viablarðe*, devilish ; *éiscéillrðe*, absurd, irrational. 4° *-òð*, *-ta*, *-tð* :—*maoròð*, majestic ; *beorð*, lively ; *iolaròð*, plural ; *coibneasta*, related ; *móròð*, stately. 5° *-mar* :—*nearcm̃ar*, strong ; *bríogm̃ar*, full of “go” ; *greannm̃ar*, queer, funny ; *ƿonnm̃ar*, glad, willing. 6° *-te*, *-ta*, *-tð*, *-tð* :—*buaílte*, struck ; *molta*, praised ; *mtiðte*, gone away ; *ƿáðta*, left. 7° *to*, *-eto* (I. *-eað*) :—*cúiseað*, *seiseað*, 5th, 6th. 8° The double suffix *-mmo* + *-eto* (I. *-m̃að*) :—*triom̃að*, 3rd, *ceatram̃að*, 4th. In the I.G. period sometimes *-mo* was used, sometimes *-to*. Lat. *decimus*, 10th (<**dekm-mo-s*), Gk. *dékatos* (<**dekm-to-s*). The two are combined in I. *-m̃að*. 9° *-ineac*, *-anac* :—*toitteanac*, willing ; *olístineac*, legal ; *ainmneac*, Nominative ; *Albanac*, Scottish ; *martanac*, lasting. 10° *lo* :—*uasal*, noble (<*ós*, above) ; *iseal*, lowly (<*ios*, below).

B.—By combination of noun and adjective, without any suffix :—*nearcm̃ar* (84 A.5) < *nearc* + *mór*, lit. strength-great. So *ceann-òána*, headstrong. The adjective *ðòmarað* must be derived from *ðòðar* (not *ðò*), as the suffixes *-mar* and *-ac* are not combined. (Proper spelling, *ðòðarað*). Mod. I. allows participles as the 2nd element : *cosnoctaitte*, barefooted.

C.—By prefixing an uninflected particle to a noun :—1° *Saròðir*, rich ; *ðaròðir*, poor (<*ðòðar*, material, with particles *so-*, *ðo*) ; *sutám*, everlasting (<*tan*, time) ; *ðeoðair*, diphthong (<*de*, composition form of *ðó*, two, and *ƿoðar*, sound) ; *suaicnirò*, well-known (*so-ait-ðnát*). The words *mcinn*, brain (<*m-ceann*), *ðiarmuirò*, Dermot (<*di-formad*), and *ðeoðair*, have become nouns. From these exx. it appears that nominal

o- stems became i- stems when adjectives were formed in this way. 2° So also io- stems and ia- stems mostly became i- stems :—Soilbír, cheerful ; doilbír, melancholy (<laḃra, speech, +so- and -oo). But cómarba, successor (it has become a noun), from O.I. orbe, heir, remains an io- stem. 3° The mod. socháir, candid, and docháir, gloomy—both from the u- stem cruḃ, form, shape—are i- stems, instead of O.I. sochrud, dochrud (u- stems). So cubair, fitting, is an i- stem, although derived from O.I. fid (u- stem), a letter of the Alphabet.

D.—By joining two adjectives together :—lán-ḃrónaḃ, in great sorrow ; beaḡ-maiteasaḃ, ne'er-do-well ; mór-cúiseaḃ, conceited ; uile-cómaḃtaḃ, almighty.

Comparison of Adjectives

85.—There are three degrees—Positive, Comparative and Superlative. There is now no *equative form*, but the *equation* is expressed by the positive (or ordinary form of the adjective), preceded by cóm (as), and followed by le (as) before a noun or pronoun, or by agus (as) before a verb :—Nílím-se cóm láirí le Samson—I'm not as strong as Samson ; tá Conḃar cóm holc le Cáit—Connor is as bad as Cáit ; nílír-se cóm maic liomsa—you are not as good as I. But—nílím cóm láirí anois 7 a bíos an uair sin—I'm not as strong now as I was then.

Comparative and Superlative

86.—In mod. I. the comparative and superlative are the same in form. The termination -e (in a few cases, -a) must be added to the positive, with attenuation of the final consonant of the positive, where necessary. Thus : geat, bright, ḡite, brighter, brightest ; fíat, generous, féite, more (most) generous ; fluc, wet, flíce, wetter, wettest ; áro, high, aoiríoe (áiríoe), higher, highest ; láirí, strong, láiríoe, stronger, strongest.

The Comparative

87.—(a) When the verb of the comparative clause is "is," the comparative follows is immediately :—Is ḡite an ḡrian ná an ḡeataḃ—the sun is brighter than the

moon ; *is fearr an t-imreas ná an t-uaigneas*—contention is better than loneliness ; *ní measa cáit ná concubair*—the one is as bad as the other ; *is fearr beic díomáoin ná droc-ghótaic*—it is better to be idle than evil-doing. Such sentences may of course be relative, e.g.—*níl doinne is measa ná tu*—there is no one (who is) worse than you.

(b) When the verb of the comparative clause is *tá*, or any verb other than *is*, the comparative must be preceded by *níos*, or *níba*, and the construction becomes relative :—*tá an ghrian ag taitneamh níos gile muid ná mar a bí sí iné*—the sun is shining more brightly to-day than it was yesterday ; *buail níos déime é*—strike it harder. (*Níos gile*=*ní a is gile*—*lit.* a something that is brighter) ; *bí an lá iné níba flice ná mar a ceapas a beo sé*—yesterday was wetter than I thought it would be.

“ *ní* ” in these sentences is an *Accusative of Extent in Degree* (Syntax, 175 A.4.). In other sentences it may be :—1° N. to a verb :—*tá níos mó ann ná ceapfá*—there's more in it than one would think. 2° A. governed by a transitive verb :—*tuḡas níos mó ná san ouit*—I gave you more than that. 3° A. governed by a preposition :—*gan níos mó ná trí scillinge 'na póca aige*—with only 3s. in his pocket. 4° Absolute :—*ní fios cía'cu níos mó nó níos tuḡa a bí ann*—there's no knowing whether there was more or less in it.

The Superlative

88.—(a) Superlative clauses are always relative, and the verb is always *is*. E.g.—*ag an bfeair is fearr is ceart an post is fearr a beic*—the best man should get the best post.

(b) There are no comparative or superlative *adverbs* in mod. I. These forms are always adjectives, are never inflected for gender or number, and are always predicate N. to some form of the verb *is* :—*An tu an té is sine acu ?* Are you the eldest ? *'Sí an tír is doibne ar bit le fadán* (L.O.)—it is the pleasantest land in the world.

(c) The word *ná* (than) was, in O.I., in 3rd person sg., *oldaas* (than is), <ol+taas, a peculiar relative form of *ta*. In middle I. *in* was substituted for *ol*, giving *indaas*, then *ionás*, *ioná*, *ná*.

(d) The two nouns, *sinnséar*, elder, ancestor, and *sóiseár*, junior, are, in form, comparative adjectives. *Sinnséar* is a *double* compar. from *seán*, old (<*sen-isteros), like Lat. *magister*, *minister* (master, servant. *Lit.*—the greater one, the lesser one). This compar. suffix -ter is common in I. E.g., *ceanntár*, district. Originally, the district *on this side* (of a mountain, river) as opposed to *alltár*, district *on the other side*. So—*oirteár*, East, as opposed to *iardeár*, West.

Irregular Comparison

89.— *Pos.*

- 1.—*beag*, small.
- 2.—*óóic*, likely.
- 3.—*áir*, high.
- 4.—*fa*, long.
- 5.—*ro*, near.
- 6.—*gearr*, short.
- 7.—*iom*, many a.
- 8.—*lu*, quick, early.
- 9.—*minic*, frequent.
- 10.—*ma*, good.
- 11.—*mór*, great.
- 12.—*ionm*, beloved.
- 13.—*olc*, bad.
- 14.—*te*, hot, warm.
- 15.—*brea*, fine.
- 16.—*treán*, strong.
- 17.—*uiriste*, easy.
- 18.—*cóir*, right.
- 19.—*deacair*, difficult.
- 20.—*socair*, settled.
- 21.—*gar*, near.
- 22.—*seascair*, cosy.
- 23.—*fiadain*, wild.

Comp. and Superl.

- lu*
óóca, *óóicige*.
aoirde (*áirde*).
sa (*fa*).
roise (*roise*) *neasa*.
gearra.
lia.
luise (*luite*).
minicí (*mionca*).
gearr.
mó.
annsa.
measa.
teo.
brea.
treise (*tréine*).
usa (*fusa*).
córa.
deacra.
socra.
goire.
seascaire.
fiadaine.

Proverbs

(Illustrating comparatives and superlatives)

90.—

1. Ní lúga an fíriúe ná mátaíu an uile—Evil may spring from anything (no matter how small. fíriú, fíriúe=flesh-worm).

2. Ní dóicíge doinníó ná an bréag do meall tu—The lie that beguiled you seems most likely.

3. Ní haoiríoe do cúro ná do clú—Your name is higher than your riches.

4. Ní sía rítríó leat ná mar is toil le Díd—You'll succeed just as long as God wishes.

5. Is goire (oo) dúine caðáir Dé ná an dorús—God's help is always very near. *Lit.*—God's help is nearer one than the door.

6. Ní lía ceann ná céadpáirí—Everyone has his own opinion.

7. Is túisge díogáltaas Dé ná an díabál—God's vengeance is quicker than the devil.

8. Is fearr ciall ceannaig ná an dá céill a múntear—Sense bought is twice as good as sense taught.

9. Ní measa Cáit (cáic) ná Concubáir—The one is as bad as the other.

10. Is treise dútcas ná oileamaint.—Nature is stronger than environment.

11. Is usa dul isteach i rí níl ná teacht as—Palaces are pitfalls.

12. Ní h-annsa cóir ná coir le dúine dána—A bold man prefers wrong to right.

Notes on Irregular Comparison

91.—2. Dóic, likely, O.I. doich (o), Gk. dókei, it seems. The O.I. compar. was dochu (our dóca). When dóca ceased to be *felt* as compar. a new compar. (and superl.), dóicíge, was formed.

4. Sía—compar. of síor, long. The compar. and superl. are used of time and space; síor now only of time.

7. Líá—compar. of lí (lo), many, now used only as a prefix.

12. Annas=O.I. annsu, compar. of annse (an-asse, not easy). Cf. the use of measa—Is measa líom tusa ná

Seán—I prefer you to Sean. *Lit.*—Your case is worse in my estimation than S.'s (Therefore, I prefer you).

11, 16. In mó, sí, treise, a suffix found in the pos. is omitted. A pos. form treis is heard in Co. Clare.

92.—Adverbs are formed from adjectives usually by prefixing go (to) to the positive, the latter being a neut. substantive in the A. case. Tá sé ag tuit i bpreabas go mór—he is improving much (*Lit.* to a great extent). The prep. de (do) is sometimes used:—de síor, de shnáit=always. Sác nóiread, straight on, occurs in the literature.

Numeral Adjectives

Cardinal

- | | |
|--------------------|--------------------------------|
| 93.— 1. aon. | 31. aon déag is fiche. |
| 2. dó. | 40. daicad. |
| 3. trí. | 41. aon is daicad. |
| 4. ceathair. | 50. deic is daicad. |
| 5. cúig. | 51. aon déag is daicad. |
| 6. sé. | 60. trí fichí. |
| 7. seacht. | 61. aon 7 trí fichí. |
| 8. ocht. | 70. deic 7 trí fichí. |
| 9. naoi. | 71. aon déag 7 trí fichí. |
| 10. deic. | 80. ceitre fichí. |
| 11. aon déag. | 81. aon is ceitre fichí. |
| 12. dó déag. | 90. deic is ceitre fichí. |
| 13. trí déag. | 91. aon déag is ceitre fichí. |
| 14. ceathair déag. | 99. naoi déag is ceitre fichí. |
| 15. cúig déag. | 100. céad. |
| 16. sé déag. | 200. da céad. |
| 17. seacht déag. | 300. trí céad. |
| 18. ocht déag. | 400. ceitre céad. |
| 19. naoi déag. | 500. cúig céad. |
| 20. fiche. | 600. sé céad. |
| 21. aon is fiche. | 700. seacht scéad. |
| 22. dó is fiche. | 800. ocht scéad. |
| 29. naoi is fiche. | 900. naoi scéad. |
| 30. deic is fiche. | 1000. míle. |

N.B.—Besides such forms as trí is fiche (23) we also have—trí ficcad, or trí ar fichí.

94.—If the old words for 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90 are used, *viz.*, τριοῦσα, τετραῦσα, πενήντα, sexasca, seaḱt-moḡa, oḱtmoḡa, nóca (nt- stems, G. in -o) we get neater and shorter forms in the compound numerals, all of which (except those for 20, 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90, 100, etc.) will be based on the first ten numerals. Thus :— Sé vḗas (16), sé ficeav (26), sé τριοῦσo (36), sé τετραῦσo (46), sé πενήντo (56), sé sexascao (66), sé seaḱt-moḡao (76), sé oḱtmoḡao (86), sé nócao (96). The use of ar in τρί ar ficevo (23), τρί ar πενήντo (53), etc., is an extension of the O.I. usage, in which it served two purposes :—(a) to join the hundreds to the smaller numbers—sexasca ar céao, 160 ; (b) to join the tens to numeral substantives—dias ar fichit (vís ar ficevo), twenty-two persons.

95.—The Cardinals are used in three different ways :—
1° Preceded by a particle a (a n- before vowels) when counting objects without naming them—a n-aon, a vó, τρι. Tá sé teat-uair tréis a trí—it is half-past three ; or when preceded by the noun, as caibrioil a trí, chapter 3 ; or when the numeral is separated from the noun by the prep. ve :—a trí nó a ceatair ve bliantaib—three or four years. 2° They are used without any particle in abstract counting, as—aon, vó, trí,—one, two, three ; or when the noun follows immediately—τρί capait—three horses. 3° In concrete enumeration, when the noun is used without ve, it is placed after the unit number (if there be one) in the sg., pl., or dual, as the sense demands. Instead of vó, ceatair (2, 4) vā (vā) ceitre are used.—Aon bliam vḗas—11 years (sg.) ; vā bliam vḗas—12 years (dual) ; trí bliana ficeav, 23 years (pl.) ; aon céarc vḗas—11 hens (sg.) ; vā círc vḗas—12 hens ; trí cearca sexascao—63 hens.

96.—The words for the tens from 20—100, as also míle (1000), milliún (a million), billiún (a billion) are nouns, and so properly take G. pl. But as the G. pl. is often the same as the N. sg., the latter is used as a rule :—fice fear, cearc, bean—20 men (hens, women). Vḗas (=2 fives) is used as G. of veic in forming

the numerals 11-19. It has no etymological connection with *deic*. *Céad* (100) is an old neut. o- stem, pl. *céad* (after numerals). Apart from numerals a new pl. *céadta* is used.

97.—*Seacht*, *ocht*, *naoi*, *deic* eclipse the initial consonant of the following noun, but *not* that of *the* *genitives* *deas*, *ricead*, etc.—*Seacht mboscaí deas*, 17 boxes ; but *seacht deas*, 17 ; *ocht mbliana caogad*—58 years, but *ocht caogad*—58 ; *naoi n-uaire trío cad*—39 times, but *naoi trío cad*—39. The reason is that in *seacht mboscaí deas*, etc., the 1st numeral is *the limiting word*, whereas in *seacht deas*, *deas* *limits the meaning* of *seacht*, and not *vice versa*. The eclipsis after *seacht*, *naoi*, *deas* is regular, as they ended originally in a nasal (Lat. *septem*, *novem*, *decem*). *Ocht* eclipses analogically. N.B.—*deic cinn*, *deic pearsana*, *deic toibreac*—10 heads, persons, wells—are heard. The reason is that the final “h” sound of *deic* *unvoices* the consonant resulting from eclipsis, and thus restores the original one. Then *seacht cinn*, etc., follow these analogically.

Examples of the Cardinals

98.—(a) 78 cards :—1—*ocht scártaí deas is trí ríad*. 2—*seacht ndeic a h-ocht de cártaí* (Note this. It is often convenient). 3—*ocht scártaí seachtmo cad*. (b) 357 books :—1—*seacht leabair deas 7 dacad*, 7 *trí céad* (*leabair*). This is cumbrous. 2—*seacht leabair deas 7 dacad ar trí céad*. 3—*trí céad 7 seacht leabair caogad* (Best). (c) The year 1927 :—*bliain a míle, naoi scéad*, 7 *seacht rícad*. (d) 1927 years :—*míle naoi scéad 7 seacht mbliana rícad*. (e) The 1927th year :—*An seachtmaó bliain rícad ar naoi scéad 7 míle*. (f) 275,000 :—1—O.I. way :—*cúig míle seachtmo cad ar dád céad*. 2—Modern I.—*dád céad 7 cúig míle seachtmo cad*. (g) 200,075 :—1—O.I. way :—*cúig seachtmo cad ar dád céad míle*. 2—Modern I.—*dád céad míle 7 cúig seachtmo cad*. (h) 75,200 :—*cúig míle seachtmo cad 7 dád céad*. (i) £245,666 :—*dád céad 7 cúig míle ceatracad, sé céad 7 sé púint seascad*. (l) 5,592,963 acres :—*cúig milliún, cúig céad*, 7 *dád míle nó cad*, *naoi scéad 7 trí h-acraí seascad*,

(m) 7,925,639 stamps :—seáct milliún, naoi gcéad 7 cúig míle pícead, sé céad 7 naoi stampaí tríoúad. (n) 6,560,374 books :—sé milliún, cúig céad 7 seasca míle, trí céad 7 ceitre leabair seáctmoúad. (o) 4,605,747 tables :—ceitre milliún, cúig míle ar sé céad, seáct gcéad 7 seáct mbúird ceátracáad. (p) 17 people :—seáct noume déas. (r) 39 people :—1—naoi noume tríoúad. 2—naoi noume déas is píce. 3—naoi noume déas ar pírd. (s) 143,000 men :—céad 7 a trí 7 daúad de míltib fear (b.n. 277).

99.—(a) Trí, ceitre, cúig, sé often aspirate the initial consonant of the following noun, which then often has the sg. form—trí capall, or trí capall—three horses ; cúig milliún, or cúig milliún, 5,000,000. This is due to trí céad, where céad is a true pl. and aspiration is regular. (b) In enumerating persons, from 13 to 19, the sg. noume is used, and o- is aspirated, if not eclipsed. Thus—trí noume déas—13 persons. But—seáct noume déas—17 persons.

Numeral Substantives

100.—(a) For persons :—Aonar, one person. Táim im' aonar—I am alone. Beirt—two (used in Ulster even of things). Días, óis, two (G.—deise, óise. But días, an ear of corn—G.—deise, D.—deis). Tríúr—three persons (Orig. D.—Old N.—tríar). Ceátrar—four persons. Cúigear—five persons. Seisear—six persons. Mór-seisear—seven persons. Also seáctar. Oútar—eight persons. Naonúar—nine persons. Deicneabúar—ten persons. Aon noume déas, aoinne déas—eleven persons ; daúad—twelve persons. Iolár—many persons (Also many things, plurality) ; lánama—a married couple (<láneamain—a perfect pair, G. lánama—but it has passed over to the n- stems—G. -an. The rt. is eamain, twin, L.—geminus. Cf. eamain, Emania.) All these forms, except beirt, óis, aon noume déas, lánama, are compounds, with fear as the 2nd element. They were originally neuter. Tríar=a three of men. But though they contain the M. fear, they are used of women also. Tríúr ban—three women. Tríúr is the old D.

of *TRÍAR*. It ousted the N. because of its frequent use in an O.I. idiom (without a prep.). E.g.—*ċánad̃ar a t̃ríúr*—the three of them came.

(b) **For things** :—*íol̃ar*, many things, plurality. Abstr. *íol̃ad̃*, plural ; *uad̃ad̃*—singleness. “*Ar uad̃ad̃ spóirt̃*,”—with scanty amusement ; *deíre*, *tréire*—two things, three things ; *tréad̃anas*, “a three days’ fast,” now generally abstinence ; *peíre*, *peíre*—a pair, brace, set (even though more than two), p. *brós*, a pair of shoes : p. *bíorán cníotála*, a set (4) of knitting-needles ; *cúpla*, a couple, twins. Dim.—*cúptín*. Always followed by the N. sg. form.

Special Ways of expressing numbers

101.—*Trí caogad̃*—150 ; *trí naonb̃air*—27 people ; *sead̃t b̃p̃ic̃í*—7 score ; *tríoc̃a céad̃*—3,000.

102.

The Ordinals

1st	<i>An céad̃ (lá)</i>	16th	<i>An seisead̃ (lá) deas̃</i>
2nd	„ <i>dara</i>	17th	„ <i>sead̃tmad̃</i> „ „
3rd	„ <i>tríom̃ad̃</i>	18th	„ <i>t-oct̃mad̃</i> „ „
4th	„ <i>cead̃tram̃ad̃</i>	19th	„ <i>naom̃ad̃</i> „ „
5th	„ <i>cúigead̃</i>	20th	„ <i>ficead̃ lá</i>
6th	„ <i>seisead̃</i>	21st	„ <i>t-aonmad̃</i> „ <i>ficead̃</i>
7th	„ <i>sead̃tmad̃</i>	22nd	„ <i>dara</i> „ „
8th	„ <i>t-oct̃mad̃</i>	30th	„ <i>deic̃mad̃</i> „ „
9th	„ <i>naom̃ad̃</i>	31st	„ <i>t-aonmad̃</i> „ <i>tríoc̃ad̃</i>
10th	„ <i>deic̃mad̃</i>	32nd	„ <i>dara</i> „ „
11th	„ <i>t-aonmad̃ (lá)</i>	33rd	„ <i>tríom̃ad̃</i> „ „
	<i>deas̃</i>	40th	„ <i>cead̃traad̃om̃ad̃ (lá)</i>
12th	„ <i>dara</i> „ „	41st	„ <i>t-aonmad̃ (lá) cead̃traad̃</i>
13th	„ <i>tríom̃ad̃</i> „ „	42nd	„ <i>dara</i> „ „
14th	„ <i>cead̃tram̃ad̃</i> „ „	43rd	„ <i>tríom̃ad̃</i> „ „
15th	„ <i>cúigead̃</i> „ „		
	50th <i>An caogad̃om̃ad̃ (lá)</i>		
	51st „ <i>t-aonmad̃ (lá) caogad̃</i>		
	52nd „ <i>dara</i> „ „		
	53rd „ <i>tríom̃ad̃</i> „ „		
	60th „ <i>seascad̃om̃ad̃ (lá)</i>		
	61st „ <i>t-aonmad̃ (lá) seascad̃</i>		

62nd	An	ṽARA	(lÁ seascAṽ)
63rd	,,	tríomAṽ	,,
70th	,,	seac̣ṭṃog̣AṽṃAṽ	(lÁ)
71st	,,	τ-AonṃAṽ	(lÁ) seac̣ṭṃog̣Aṽ
72nd	,,	ṽARA	,,
73rd	,,	tríomAṽ	(lÁ) seac̣ṭṃog̣Aṽ
80th	,,	τ-ọc̣ṭṃog̣AṽṃAṽ	(lÁ)
81st	,,	τ-AonṃAṽ	(lÁ) ọc̣ṭṃog̣Aṽ
82nd	,,	ṽARA	,,
90th	,,	nọ́c̣AṽṃAṽ	(lÁ)
91st	,,	τ-AonṃAṽ	(lÁ) nọ́c̣Aṽ
92nd	,,	ṽARA	,,
100th	,,	céAṽṃAṽ	(lÁ)
101st	,,	τ-AonṃAṽ	(lÁ) AR céAṽ
110th	,,	ṽeic̣ṃAṽ	,,
121st	,,	τ-AonṃAṽ	(lÁ) f̣ic̣eAṽ AR céAṽ
131st	,,	,,	,, tríọc̣Aṽ ,,
222nd	,,	ṽARA	,, f̣ic̣eAṽ ,, ṽÁ céAṽ

103.—(a) Besides tríomAṽ (3rd), seiseAṽ (6th), ṽeic̣ṃAṽ-f̣ic̣eAṽ (30th) we have also treas, sémAṽ, tríọc̣AṽṃAṽ. (b) CéAṽ, 1st, is used in the simple, AonṃAṽ in the compound numerals. CéAṽ aspirates the following consonant, because, like Aon, it formed a compound. AonṃAṽ (like the others in -ṃAṽ) does *not* aspirate, but (like them) is followed by n- before a vowel, except in the G.—na n-AonṃAṽ aoise ṽéAṽ, of the 11th century.

(b) First, adverbially, is AR ṽc̣úis (AR ṽc̣ús). ṽ'foḡlum sé A ceac̣ṭ AR ṽc̣úis—First he learned his lesson ; 1 ṽc̣eAṽ-óir—at once, forthwith ; 1 ṽc̣osac̣—at the beginning of. (c) The Ordinals (from 1st to 10th, as well as 20th, 100th, 1000th) immediately precede the noun, like the Cardinals (the tens, however, together with céAṽ, míle, milliún, being *nouns*). (d) “Last” is ṽeiṛionac̣, ṽeiṛeanaac̣, which *follow* the noun ; or it may be expressed by ṽeiṛṛo (G. sg. of ṽeiṛeAṽ) ; or, in such expressions as “last Sunday,” special phrases are used. E.g.—ṽíonn an ṽuine ṽeiṛionac̣ ṽíog̣ḅálac̣—the last is likely to be a sufferer ; lÁ ṽeiṛṛo an mí—the last day of the month ; ṽíA ṽoṃṇAṽṽ seo ṽAṽ ṽARAinn—last Sunday (adverbial.—See 296). (e) The other day (i.e., a few days ago) is—

an lá fé veireadh, or an lá ceana. (f) “One day” (i.e., on a certain day) is—simply lá—lá vā raib sé ag véanam brós (Séana)—One day as he was making shoes. Don lá means “any day”—Tair isteach cúgam don lá is maic leat—Come in to me any day you please. Don lá amáin means one day (not two, or three)—Níor cáiteas ann ac don lá amáin—I spent only one day there. Lá áirithe—on a certain day, is stronger than lá alone.

104.—The Ordinals are indeclinable adjectives, used with sg. nouns only. (But see 105). “The first arrivals,” “the first three rows,” etc., must be turned in another way.—b’iad san ba cúisge a táinig—These were the first arrivals. Na h-uimreacha tosaigh—The first numbers. Na trí surdeacháin tosaigh—The three front seats. Tosaigh is so used even with a sg. noun—Sroé focal tosaigh na tána.—This is the first word of the Táin.

105.—But céad can be used before vā :—An céad vā lá san—Those first two days. Here vā lá is viewed as a unity. Cf. an veic bpúint sin—That £10, where veic bpúint is a *sum* of money, and so takes the sg. article. So we may say—An céad veic bpúint, an dara veic bpúint—The 1st (2nd) *sum* of £10. An vā céad lá san= Those 200 days. Such expressions as “the third seats” (in several rows) are not allowable in I. They must be expressed *distributively* :—Sach tríomadh surdeachán.

Fractions

106.— $\frac{1}{2}$ —leat (Neut. o- stem, G. leit). It is used separately, and as a prefix—leat mo rígeadta, the half of my kingdom ; leat-pinginn, $\frac{1}{2}$ d. ; leat-tuistíun, 2d. (tuistíun, 4d.) ; leat-raol, 3d. $\frac{1}{3}$ —trían (Neut. o- stem): vā vtrian (note eclipsis), $\frac{2}{3}$; $\frac{1}{4}$ —ceatramha (F. n- stem). In D. sg. ceatramha (cf. quatrain) it means a line in a four-line stanza, or the stanza itself. $\frac{1}{5}$ —cúigeadh (Neuter Ordinal used as noun). So the other Ordinals are used with cur, rann, etc., to express other fractions. $\frac{7}{13}$ —an tríomadh rann véas fé seacht. $\frac{1}{10}$ —Deachmhadh—also tithe, or tax, in general. Veicmhadh=10th. $\frac{1}{8}$ —Sémadh cur (leat-trian). In fractions like $\frac{6}{7}$, $\frac{7}{10}$, the Ordinal, though

used substantivally, is uninflected :—sé seachtmáð ($\frac{6}{7}$), seacht noeachmáð ($\frac{7}{10}$), an píceað curo de—the $\frac{1}{20}$. Trí ceathramna ($\frac{3}{4}$).

Multiplicatives

107.—Donfeacht, once ; dá uair—twice ; a dó pé dó (pé n-a dó)— 2×2 ; trí trí—thrice (Numeral A). Trí seacht— 7×3 . Deic bfiúro—ten score, 20×10 , etc. The *o-* of dá is aspirated, except after *o*, *n*, *t*, *l*, *s* ; or, of course, it may be eclipsed.

Other Adjectives of Quantity (not Numerals)

108.—(a) Éigin, áiríte.—Bí an tuataí déanta ag dume éigin—Someone had blundered. It is implied that the speaker *did not know* who it was. Éigin is probably the Instrumental case of the noun, éigean, necessity. Áiríte also was a noun (K. uses *o'áiríte*). Tá neite áiríte gur maít liom tagairt dóib—I should like to refer to certain things (the speaker, of course, knows them). Éigin corresponds to L. aliquis, and áiríte to quidam. (b) “Any”—don (in neg. sentences, “no”)—’bpuil don airgead agat? Have you any money? Níl don ciail agat—You have no sense. “Anyway”—ar don cuma. In affirmative sentences, pé cuma, pé áit, are also used. Pé cuma is fearr leat—Anyway you prefer. Pé áit is maít leat—Anywhere you like. (c) “Many, many a.”—Is mó dume bí i rioct sparán o’fásáil (Séaona). Many a man was on the point of getting a purse. But “many” is often rendered by nouns, or certain idiomatic expressions. A lán uisge, airgíro, aráin—Much water, money, bread. A definite G. must not follow a lán. Partitive de (with D.) must be used instead. A lán o’uisge na Laoi—Much of the Lee water. Mórán—Is é is dóic le mórán—Many people think ; puinn—(Only in negative, or virtually negative clauses) : Níor scríob sé puinn leabhar—He didn’t write many books ; dá mbeað puinn daoime 7 eolas acu air—Had there been many (there were not) who knew it. (d) How many? An ’mó? Cé méro? ’Oé méro :—An mó Oia

ann ?—How many Gods are there ? Cé méir fear a bí ann ?—How many men were there ? Dé méir garsún sa scoil iníu ? (e) However many—dá méir (a méir), dá liact (a liact), etc. Dá méir a bí ann ní raib dóctair oíob ann—However many were there, there weren't enough. (f) So many—(a) oiread san—bí oiread san acu ann gur cuairt díom a gcómaiream—There were so many there I couldn't count them. (g) As many more—oiread eile—Dá mbead oiread eile acu ann o'féadfaínn iad a cómaiream—Had there been as many more there, I could have counted them. (h) Twice as many as—da oiread agus—Tá da oiread seirbiseac anois aige 7 a bí aige bliain ó shin—He has twice as many servants now, as he had a year ago. (i) Half as many—leat an oiread—Níl ac leat an oiread seirbiseac anois aige 7 a bí aige—He has only half as many servants now as he had. (j) Too many—an iomad, an iomarca—Tá an iomad camnte agat—You've too much to say. (k) A great many. Besides mórán, a lán, other phrases occur :—Ní beag de seo ; ní beag o'iongna ; ní beag o'uaibbas ; is mór an seo ; níl don tseo (don iongna, don uaibbas) ac (l) As many as—Cóm (líonmar, iomadamail, pairsing, reirseamail) agus (verb following) or le (noun or pronoun following). (m) All—gac, gac don, an uile, gac uile—an uile duine—every one. Not always expressed by adjectives :—A raib o'airgead ann—all the money there was. As prefix, -uile (iol, oll)—uile-cómactac, almighty ; ollscoil, iolscoil—University. (n) Other, another, others—eile ; nac (é, í, iad) ; fé deire, ceana :—An lá fé deire—the other day ; daoine nac é (í, iad)—other people. (o) One after another—1 nriaró céile ; 'na gceann is 'na gceann (of things), 'na nriune is 'na nriune (of persons) ; fá seac. (p) Each other, one another—a céile. (q). More.—Besides the comparative mó, one uses also tuille, breis (nouns) ; tar, seacas (prepositions) ; Any more than—ac oiread agus (before verb), ac oiread le (before noun or pronoun) ; ac cóm beag agus (or le) ; ac fé mar. . . . Once more—arís ; don uair amáin eile ; the prefix ac, aic,—do deim sé é ac-aicris—he told it once more. More power to you—Conac sanort ; a conac san ort.

Pronominal Adjectives

109.—These are derived from, or partake of the function of, pronouns. They are :—(a) The Article (See 1-7.) (b) Possessive Adjectives. (c) Demonstrative Adjectives. (d) Interrogative Adjectives. The article, being formed from the two pronominal elements, “sin” and “to, ta,” belongs to this class. (b) The Possessive Adjectives are :—

<i>Sg.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
1. mo' -sa (-se)	ár ⁿ -na (-ne)
2. ro' -sa (-se)	ðár ⁿ -sa (-se)
3. M. Neut. á' san (sín)	á ⁿ -san(sín)
F. á san (sín)	

These are *the emphatic forms*, which alone should be given in a paradigm. When the English *my*, *thy*, etc., are given in a list, they mean, of course, *my*, *thy* (contrasting the persons). The Irish for *my*, *thy*, etc., is *not*, and *could not be*, mo, ro, etc., but as given above. When there is no emphasis, drop the particles. Examples :—
Mo tíg, *my house* : mo tíg-se (mo teac-sa)—*my house* ;
A gcáinnic breá—*their fine talk* : A gcáinnic breá san—*their fine talk*.

(c) The Demonstrative Adjectives are :—1. So, seo. 2. úo. 3. san, sín. They follow the noun, or noun+adjective or adjectives, immediately, and the noun is generally preceded by the article. But proper nouns, especially if the demonstrative is followed by *agáinn-ne* (agáib-se, acu san) may dispense with it.—Séar^{na} so agáinn-ne—*This Séar^{na} of ours*. Also, in Oí^a máirt seo cúgáinn, etc., there is no article. So (seo) is the demonstrative of the 1st person, úo that of the second, and san (sín) that of the third. Seo and sín are used after a *slender* vowel or consonant.

(d) Interrogative Adjectives :—Cí^a, and ca are often adjectival :—Cíonnus (cí^a ionnus), *how* ; c'áit (U.) *where* ; ca n-uair (U.), *when* ; can^{ao} (ca ion^{ao}) *where* ; cí^a 'cu (followed by noun) *which* ; cí^a mé^{ro}—*how many*, *how much* ; cé^{aro}, cré^{ao}, *what* ? Cíonnus (conus) 'tá^{oi} ? *How are you* ? (An “is” not a “tá” sentence,

as the principal verb is "is"). Expanded it is—C1Δ ionnus Δn ionnus Δ τΔ01? What way (is) the way in which you are? Cf. the Conn. C1Δ éΔ01 Δ b̄fuil tú? C'Δ1τ Δ (1) RΔ1b̄ (RΔb̄) sé (U)? Where was he? 'O'mt̄iḡ sé—ní f̄ios 'oom canΔo—He went—I know not where. C1Δ'cu ceann Δb' f̄earr leat? Which one would you prefer? Equivalent to—C1Δ ceann Δcu (Δn ceann) Δb' f̄earr leat? In the expressions C1Δ h-é (í, 1Δo), CΔo é (í, 1Δo), c1Δ and cΔo are *pronouns*.

CHAPTER IV.

PRONOUNS.

110.—Pronouns are either—(a) Personal. (b) Demonstrative. (c) Interrogative. (d) Indefinite. (e) Reflexive. (f) Relative.

The Personal Pronouns are :—

<i>Sg.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>
1. mise	Sinn-ne (Sinne)
2. túsa	Sib-se
3. M.—Eisean (Seisean)	1aó-san (S1aó san)
F.—ise (Sise)	All genders.
Neut.—eaó ón (eaóon).	

These are the emphatic forms (See 109). When unemphatic the 1st sg. is mé, 2nd tú, 3rd M. é (sé), F. í (sí), Neut. eaó. In the pl. drop the emphatic particles. É, í, 1aó (and their emphatic forms) are used :—1° As subjects or predicates to the vb. is :—1s é Séaona a bí ann—It was S. who was there (I. é *predicate*, Eng. *it subject*, each proleptic). 2° Disjunctively, i.e., unattached, either as subj. or pred. to a verb :—Bí sé ann, 7 é ar dearg-buile—There he was, stark mad. 3° As object of a transitive verb (autonomous or otherwise) ; as subject of a passive verb ; or A. governed by certain prepositions :—buail é, strike him ; pósfaí í—someone will marry her ; creacfaí 1aó—they will be robbed ; roir é 7 í—between him and her. 4° Absolutely (See 195) :—Tá a fíois agam í beir i ngráó leis—I know she's in love with him.

Seisean, sise, s1aó-san (and their unemphatic forms) are used conjunctively as subjects to any verb other than is :—Tá sé ar buile—He's mad ; Táro s1aó san ar don aigne liomsa—They agree with me.

The neut. emphatic particle (in 3rd sg.) appears only in eaóon, O.I. ed ón, ie. (viz., namely). It means

“it (is) it.” With the copula *ón* or *són* was used where we now say *san*.—*bá dochtige liom san*=O.I. *ba dochu lem són* (Quoted by *Thurn*. 241).

The Suffixed Pronouns

111.—A.—The so-called prepositional pronouns are examples of personal pronouns suffixed (in D. or A.) to prepositions. B. Genitive pronouns suffixed to prepositions. C. Suffixed—*o* in verbs.

A.—Prepositional Pronouns

Old Datives

112.—

(a) *oo*, to, for, etc.

Sg.

Pl.

1. *oóm-sa*

oúinn-ne

2. *ouit-se*

oaoib-se

3. M.Neut. *oó-san*

oóib-sin

F. *oi-se*

(b) *oe*, from, off, etc.

Sg.

Pl.

oíom-sa

oínn-ne

oíot-sa

oib-se

oe sin

oíob-san

oíse

(c) *Ó*, from, through, etc.

1. *uaim-se*

uainn-ne

2. *uait-se*

uaidb-se

3. M.Neut. *uaid sin*

uata san

F. *uaithe sin (-se)*

(d) *Δ* (*as*), out of.

asam-sa

asainn-ne

asat-sa

asaidb-se

as san

asta san

aiste sin

(e) *Roim*, before (O.I. *re*)

1. *roimam-sa*

roimainn-ne

2. *roimat-sa*

roimaidb-se

3. M.Neut. *roime sin*

roimpa-san

F. *roimp1 sin*

(f) *Δs*, at, etc.

asam-sa

asainn-ne

asat-sa

asaidb-se

aíge sin

aca-san

aic1 sin

113.—

Old Accusatives.

(g) *le*, with, etc.

1. *liom-sa*

linn-ne

2. *leat-sa*

lib-se

3. *leis-sin*

leo-san

F. *léit1-sin (léi)*

(h) *tré*, through

tríom-sa

trínn-ne

tríot-sa

tríib-se

tríob sin

tríot1-san

tríte sin

(i) So, to (O.I. co)

(l) um, about, around,
etc.

1. cúgam-sa	cúgaínn-ne	umam-sa	umáinn-ne
2. cúgat-sa	cúgaib-se	umat-sa	umaib-se
3. cuige sin	cúca-san	uime sin	úmpa san
F. cúicī sin		uimpī sin	

(m) roir, between, etc.

(n) Tar, beyond, past,
etc.

1. eadram-sa	eadraínn-ne	tarra-sa	tarraínn-ne
2. eadrat-sa	eadraib-se	tarra-sa	tarraib-se
3. roir é	eadorta san	tarraí sin	tarraí, tarraí,
F. roir í		tarraí sin	tarraí sin

114. Either Dative or Accusative.

(o) in, in, into

(p) ar, because of, on, into,
etc.

1. ionnam-sa	ionnaínn-ne	orm-sa	orainn-ne
2. ionnat-sa	ionnaib-se	ort-sa	oraib-se
3. ann san	ionnta-san	aí sin	orta-san
F. inntī sin		uirctī sin	

(r) fé (fó, fá, faoi), under, etc.

Sg.—1. fúm-sa	Pl.—1. fúinn-ne
2. fút-sa	2. fuib-se
3. fé sin (faoi sin). M. Neut.	3. fúta san.
F. fúitī sin.	

115.—Besides these we have :—

(a) Occasionally—Seac, besides (A).—Seacam-sa, seaca-sa, seac é, seac í. Pl.—Seacáinn-ne, seacáib-se, seaca san. Instead of seac é, í, seaca san, we now use seacas é, í, iad san. (b) Isolated forms :—1. Céana, now an adv.=already, is a prep. pron. from O.I. cen (our san)=without it. 2. Riam, now an adv.=ever before, is prep. pron. 3 sg. M. and Neut. from re, before. 3. In riut (as síor-séiríeas riut—"Éamonn an Cnuic,") we have 2 sg. form from the prep. fri, against (O.I. frit, friut). Riut also occurs as 2 sg. from re, before.

4. The Conn. *preisin* seems to be the O.I. *friss sin*, influenced by *leis sin*. 5. K. has *uΔistī* (3 sg. F.) from *ōs* (K.P. 79).

116.— Notes on the Prepositional Pronouns.

(a) *Cúgam-sa*, etc., though formed from the O.I. prep. *co* (50) reduplicated, are now associated with the later prep. *cum*. That is, they are used wherever *cum* would be used with nouns. E.g.—*cum na caṭraḥ*—to the city; *cúca san*—to them. The reduplication may be due to the influence of *Δgam-sa Δḡat-sa* (*Thurn.*). (b) *fo*, now *fo* (Conn. *ḡaoī*, U. *ḡá*, M. *ḡé*). *ḡaoī* may be due to O.I. 3 sg. A. *foi*; and *ḡé* may be due to the M. pronunciation of *-aoī* in certain words, e.g., *caoī*. *ḡúitī* seems to be formed on the analogy of *cúitī*, *uΔite* (the later O.I. form was *foae*). (c) *Ann*, orig. D. while *inntī* (O.I. *inte*) was A. The A.M. and D.F. forms are lost. In *ionnta* (O.I. *intiu*) the pron. is A., the D. (O.I. *inuib*) having become obsolete, because it was the same in form as the 2 pl. (our *ionnaib*). (d) In *orta*, *leo*, *leobta* (analogical), *tríota*, *eatorta*, *iompa*, *cúca*, *társa*, the pron. is A., as the preps. *le*, *tré*, *roir*, *un*, *co*, *tar* governed only an A., while *ar* (though it governed both cases with *nouns*) was compounded only with A. *pronouns*). (e) *Δcu*, *Δsta*, *uΔta*, *rómpa* are formed after these models (o), replacing the forms in *-uib*—O.I. *occaib*, *eissib*, *uadaib*, *remib*—where the prons. were of course D., as these prepositions governed only the D. (f) In *oóib*, *oíob*, we have regular D. forms, except that the final *-uib* of *oíob* has been broadened, to prevent confusion with the 2 pl. *díib*. (g) In 2 sg. a slender *-t* seems to have been regular in D. so that *oíot*, *Δsat*, *Δḡat*, *rómat* are irregular. A. forms show broad *-t*—*leat*, *umat*, *tríot*, *cúḡat*, *tart*, *ionnat*. *ort*, *ḡut*, *seacav*. (h) In 3 sg. M. and Neut. the A. pronoun in O.I. appeared as :—1° a slender vowel, after preps. which originally ended in a vowel—*ḡé*, *uime*, *cúige*, *ceana* (O.I. *cene*). 2° After preps. which originally ended in a consonant, the vowel is lost, but the final consonant is slender—*leis*, *trío*, *Δmlarō*, *tairis*. *Δir* was in O.I. regular, *airi*; the mod. *Δir* is irregular, modelled on O.I. *foir*, *fair*. *Ann*, as we have already

seen, is D. (i) The 3 sg. A.F. in O.I. ended in *-e* (now mostly *-i*, because of the pron. *i*)—*innɿɿ*, *uimpɿ*, *čúɿɿ*. (j) The 3 sg. D.M. shows either a final broad consonant, or broad vowel—*ann*, *ɿɿam*, *as*, *oó*. *Δɿge* (O.I. *occo*) is modelled on *čúɿge* (A). *uaro* (O.I. *uao*) may be influenced by *uam*, *uat*.

B.—Genitive Pronouns suffixed to Prepositions.

117.—Instead of the full forms of the G. pronouns certain prepositions usually have shorter suffixed forms. These prepositions are :—*as*, *o*, *m*, *oo*, *oe*, *fé* *le* :—*asam' máčair*—at my mother ; *am' čɿg-se*—at *my* house ; *oubaɿɿt sé suas lem' beaɿ*—he said up to my face ; *čá sé sé mɿle om čɿg-se go ɿɿɿ oo čɿg-se*—it's six miles from my house to yours ; *oom lom oeɿɿo amroena*—entirely against my will ; *oo bameao oem' bonnaɿb mé*—I was taken off my feet. 2nd sg. *asoo' máčair*—at your mother ; *o' čɿg-se*, in *your* house ; *let' ačair*—with your father. So—*oor'*, *oot'*—to your ; *oeo'*, *oet'*, of or from your ; *feo'*, *fo'o'*—under your ; *oo'*, *ot'*—from your. . . . With a (3 sg. M.F.) and a (3 pl.) we have—*asá* (*s* slender), *o'á* ; after *o*, *le*, *fé* (owing to *m* and other eclipsing preps.) *o n-a*, *le n-a*, *fé n-a*. In 1 pl. and 2 pl. the G. pronouns are never shortened.

C.—Suffixed *-o* in Verbs.

118.—In 1 pl. pres. Ind. Act. and Fut. Ind. Act. final *-o* is a neuter pronoun :—*oeanɿamɿo*, *surómɿo*, *lit.*—we shall do it, we pray for *it*. So final *-o* in 1 sg. Fut. Ind. Act., and 1 sg. Pres. Subj. Act. :—*rašao*, *beao*.

Demonstrative Pronouns

119.—These are :—1. *Seo*, *so*. 2. *Siúo*, *súo*. 3. *Sin*, *san*. Strengthened forms—*é seo*, *é siúo*, *é sin* (*i seo*, *iao so*, etc.). The simple forms are uninflected for gender, number and case. The strengthened forms indicate gender and number, and of course the prep. pronouns, when followed by the demonstratives, *do not* cease to convey distinctions in gender, number and case.

120.—The Demonstratives may be :—1° Subj. of the verb *is*, or other verb :—*Is fearr so ná súo*—This is better than that. *Ní maíct liom san : ní taitneann san liom*—I don't like that. 2° Predicate to verb *is* (when not following immediately)—*Sé deirimse leat ná so*—This is what I tell you. *Sé teastuig uaird ná súo*—What he wanted was what I told you. When they follow *is* immediately they are strengthened by *é, í, iad* :—*'Sí síúo a bí uaird*—It was “that one” he wanted. 3° Object of transitive verb (Autonomous or otherwise)—*Tarraing seo, buail sin*—Pull this, strike that (Rhyme). 4° Used *absolutely* :—*Bí a luict cómairle gá áiteam uirtí san a déanam*—Her advisers urged her to do that. 5° Governed by prep. :—*As san*—out of that; *oar so 7 súo*—by all the oaths. 6° Virtual N.—*Beaó náire orm san do déanam*—I should be ashamed to do that (See 169).

Interrogative Pronouns

121.—*Cíad* (M.F.), *cé* (M.F.) ; *cíad h-*, *cé h-* (before *é, í, iad*) ; *cad* (Neut.). *Cá*, whence (*ca + an*—the same *an* as we have *prefixed* in *an-uas*, etc. (See 157B),—is the only mod. I. ex. of an interrogative pron. governed by a prep. Otherwise *cíad, cad, ca* (and compounds) are always pred. N. to vb. *is* (understood). The U. forms—*goróe, goróí, goróiad*, seem to reflect O.I. *cote, coteet*—cate in *fhírinne*—in what consisteth righteousness ?

Interrogative Particles

122.—Direct and indirect *single* questions, not introduced by interrogative pronouns, or adjectives, prefix the particles *an, ar*.—*An raibais ar scoil m'óe?*—Were you at school yesterday? *O'fíafraig sé díom an raibais ar scoil m'óe*—He asked me if I was at school yesterday. *Negative* questions are introduced by *ná* (in Munster, except with “*is*”) ; *nac*, outside Munster, with all verbs ; in Munster, also with the present tense of *is* ; *nár* everywhere, in the past tense, except with those verbs to which *ro* is attached, and certain others which dispense with *ro*—altogether. *Nár* (like *ar*) is used also

with the Conditional of *is* (expressed or understood).
Ná fuil sé annso?—Isn't he here? *Ná c fearra duit é?*
 Isn't it better for you? *Ná c bfuil sé côm mairc ašac?*
 (outside Munster)—May you not as well. . . .? But
Ná raðais ann?—Weren't you there? *Ná feacaís é?*—
 Didn't you see him?

123.—*Double* questions are put by means of *cia'cu*, with a direct relative form in the first member, and *nó ná* (*nac*, *nár*) in the second member, when it is negative. (For explanation, see **214 II.**). *Is deacair a ráð cia'cu (a) cuair sé ann nó nár cuair (deášair)*—It is hard to say whether he went or not. The disjunction implied in “whether . . . or” may be expressed in other ways :—1° (Without *cia'cu*) :—*Ar fan sé ann, nó an amlar a cuair sé a baile*—Did he stay or go home? 2° The 2nd alternative is put in the verb n. form, with ellipsis of the auxiliary verb *dein* (see **286**).—*Ar fan sé ann, nó dul a baile?*

Indefinite Pronouns

124.—(a) *Các*, everyone :—*ta fíos aš các*—everyone knows. (b) *doimne* (*doimneac*)—anyone (with neg.—none): *šac doimne*, everyone. (c) *ceactar*—originally “each of two,” now “one or other of two”; with neg. “neither,” “not any” (of more than two). (d) *-neac*—someone, anyone. Nearly obsolete, but we have it in *doimneac*, and in the comparative form *neactar*. (e) The neut. *ní*, anything, had something to do with the development of the noun *níò*, a thing. In L.B. we find a pl. *nechi*, mod. *neite*. In *níò.*, the *ò* is merely a re-echo of *č* (for earlier *ch*) in *neite*. The pl. spelling *níòte* is a reconstruction from *níò*. (e) *neactar*. Originally, “one of two.” Common now in the phrase—*nó neactar acu*=or else. Both *ceactar* and *neactar* were probably neuter nouns originally, like *oirctar*, *iarctar*, *ceanntar*, *alltar*, etc.

The adjectival form of *các* is *šac*. The slender *c-* in *ceactar* is due to *neactar*. The *š-* of *šac* is often slender also, especially in :—*šac 're searò*. *Don* is sometimes

used pronominally. *Don naom̃ta D̃e* (C.S. Mark, I, 24)—The Holy One of God. *Don dem' cáir̃oib̃ sr̃oe* (TBC)—one of my “supernatural” friends. *Don ba mó ná é f̃em* (CMD. 394)—One greater than he. *D̃innis eom cé'rb̃ é an t-Don san* (CMD. 394),—John told who this One was.

Reflexive Pronouns

125.—Added to the personal pronouns, *f̃em* makes them reflexive :—*do gortuig̃ sé é f̃em*—he hurt himself. *Caom̃ tu f̃em a d̃ume boic̃t* (KP.)—weep for thyself wretched man. *Gr̃aib̃ do d̃ume f̃em*—self-love. Besides the reflexive meaning, *f̃em* has others :—(a) Own—*mo leab̃ar f̃em*—my own book ; *tu f̃em f̃e noeár é*—the responsibility is all your own. (b) Even—*an méro sin f̃em*—even that. *Cuir̃ i gcás f̃em*—even supposing. *f̃em* contains a part of the verb *is*, and *é sin*, but is now used of all three persons, both numbers, and all genders. It is an example of *the generalisation of a single form*. Cf. the nominal phrase *a céite*, used to mean, each other, one another.

Relative Pronouns

126.—Direct relatives are, normally, those used in N. and A. But after prepositions which govern the A., the forms 5° below are used. Oblique relatives are those used for G. and D. (including Abl., Loc. and Instr.). The modern relatives are :—A.—Direct :—1° *a'*, 2° *do'*, 3° *a' o'*, 4° (particle omitted). B.—Oblique :—5° *an*, *ar'*, 6° *son*, *sur'*, 7° *nan*, *n-ar'*. C.—Negative :—8° *ná*, in Munster (outside past tense) with verbs other than *is*. 9° *nac̃*, outside Munster, with all verbs (except past tense) ; and in Munster with *is* (in present tense). 10° *nár'* in past tense ; and in the conditional of *is*. D.—Compound :—11° *an* (outside past tense) ; *ar'*, in past tense ; and conditional of *is* ; and, without aspiration, in present tense of *is*. Examples :—

1° *a'*—*An bean cos-noctait̃e is i a b̃i ann* (S.)—It was none other than the barefooted woman. 2° *do'*, *o'*—*Sr̃oe an té do cuar̃o ann*—this is he who went. *Tá f̃ios*

aḡ luēt na n-ionnarba cao v'oireann doib (T.B.C. 247)—
 The exiles know what (it is that) suits them. 3° a v'—
 nuair a v'eirig lósep as a coola do dem sé mar a
 v'orouig aingeal an tigearna vó (C.S. 3)—And Joseph,
 rising up from sleep, did as the Angel of the Lord had
 commanded him. 4° (Particle understood). Sin é milt
 mé (S.)—that's what ruined me. Cao é an tairbe féarfao
 sé a véanam duit? What good could he do you? 5° an,
 ar' (ar', in past tense; also in present (without aspira-
 tion), and conditional, of is):—Cé'r vóib mé, nó cé 'mb'
 as mé (N.n.5.6)—Who I was, or whence I was. An curac
 a cur a baile aḡ an bfeair a mbu leis i (Ibid. 21)—to send
 the curragh home to its owner. (Note, in these exx.
 from Conn. I., that an sometimes does *not* combine with
 ro in the past tense. The same is true of go occasionally
 in Munster I.—an munnair go mba leo é (CMO. 377)—
 the owners of it). Sul a raib v'uam aise filleao—before
 he had time to return (Here ro- combines with the verb).
 Is mairg do'n fear san tré n-a vóeafar Mac an Dume
 do vóil (C.S. 75)—Woe to him through whom the Son
 of Man shall be betrayed (Rel. A. governed by tré).
 6° son, sur' (sur' in past tense; and also in pres. (without
 aspiration) and conditional of is). An té leis sur cúman
 fágao (Proverb)—If you haven't room enough you can
 leave! An té surbé a vóia a vóig—he whose God is
 his belly. 7° n-an, nar' (n-ar' in past tense; and also
 in present (without aspiration) and conditional of is):—
 An té n-arb' é a vóia a vóig—he whose God is his belly.
 'Sé vubairt gac flait n-ar mait leis triall (Song)—Every
 chief that wished to go (to fight) said. 8°, 9°, 10°—ná,
 nac, nar:—Ruó éigim nar v'féoir a v'fágail—something
 that could not be got. An té ná fuil láoir ní fuláir vó
 veit glúic (Proverb)—If you're not strong, you need
 cunning. An té nac truaḡ leis do cas, ná dem do gearán
 leis (Proverb)—Don't look for sympathy from the
 unsympathetic. 11° The Compound Relative—an, ar':—
 v'fág sé an gleann 's a raib ann aḡam—He gave me
carte blanche (Lit.—He left me the glen, and all that
 was in it). Vó cáiteas ar tuilleas—I spent all I earned.
 N.B.—The relatives 8°, 9°, 10°. 11°, have no distinctive
 forms for direct and oblique uses.

Development of *go*, *sur*; *n-a*, *n-ar*; *oo*; *a'*.

127.—*go*, *sur*.—Developed from—1° *a₅ a—An ní ó bfuil saeóeal Glas, is tearc sa bfuil a seanás* (K.H. II, 18)—Few people know the history of the name G.G. (*sa=a₅ a*, passing easily to *go*). 2° The conjunction ***go***—*Cao é mar úime é seo, go smaictuigeann sé saot 7 fairrge, 7 go ndeimio siad ruo air?* (Luke, viii, 25)—Who is this that He commandeth the winds and the sea, and they obey Him? The 1st *go* is clearly conjunctive. The 2nd one easily develops the relative meaning—“Who is this *whom* winds and sea obey”? 3° The contrast between *ná* and *go* as *conjunctions* facilitates the use of *go* as an *affirmative* relative, corresponding to the *negative* relative *ná*. By a sort of *proportional analogy*, we get—Con. *ná* : conj. *go* : : Rel. *ná* : **Rel. *go***—*Neite beasa jnár cuir sé blúire suime ionnta nuair a connaic sé ar dtúis iad, ac sur cuir sé mórán suime anois ionnta* (N. 168)—Trifles to which he paid no attention whatever when he first saw them, but to which he paid great attention now.

n-a, *n-ar* :—1° From preps. which ended in a nasal (and others which imitated them) we get, with oblique rel. *a*, the form *n-a* (*n-ar*). E.g.—1 *n-a* (in which), *go n-a* (with which), *ria n-a* (before whom), and, in imitation of these, *ó n-a* (from which), *tré n-a*, *le n-a*. *n-a* was then isolated, and used as an oblique relative, even when such preps. did not precede it. 2° From accidental occurrences like—*an bean n-a bfuil an t-éadóac corcra uirtí*—where the final *-n* of *bean* might have been carried to *a*, changing it into *n-a*. Cf. the *liaison* in Fr. *vous avez*, etc., and a like phenomenon with rel. *oo*.

oo.—1°—From confusion with prep. *oo* in compound verbs like *oo-geibim*, *oo-cuair*. These, when non-relative, are often used without *oo*, which then assumes the function of a relative. 2° *oo* *beir* in O.I. (with unaspirated *b-*), but *intí do beir* (*b-asp.*)—he who gives. In mod. I. *oo beir*, where *o* is always aspirated, the aspiration cannot mark relativity, which is therefore assigned to *oo*—*an té oo beir*. 3° From fortuitous occurrences like—*tá 'fios a₅ luct na h-ionnarda cao o'oireann oóib*.

Δ'.—In verbs like ατά, αοείη, αουβδαίη, initial α- contains the remains of a prep. which was kept, in later I., only in rel. sentences, so that gradually it came to be looked on as the relative element. Δη η-ατάη ατά ηη ηεαή—Our Father who art in heaven. The form α' ο' is merely a reduplicated form of οο. The prep. οο often becomes α, and before certain words beginning with a vowel, or η takes the double form α ο (this happens in Scottish Gaelic also). **Relative οο**, side by side with relative α, has been similarly treated.

N.B.—The direct relative α does *not* aspirate :—
(a) βα, the past and conditional of is. Δη τέ α β' ηεαή—he who was best ; β' σή ε α β' ηεαή—that's what would have been best. (b) Autonomous forms (in many places). Τρέις α τειγτεαη γαό βεαη (Proverb)—it is afterwards a deed is appreciated. This holds even when the *meaning* is oblique (as in last ex.). It holds also of οο—Δη ηυο οο οεμεαο, that which was done. (c) The τ- of ατά and the ο- of οείη, ουβδαίη, etc.—Ηί με αουβδαίη Δη εαήηη σή—It wasn't I who said that.

Note also, that ηη, η-ηη, γηη never aspirate the β of the present tense of is :—πέ ουμε ηη η-ηβ αη ε—Whoever thinks it queer. Δη τέ η-ηβέ α Όια α βολγ.

CHAPTER V.

THE VERB.

128.—A.—Simple Verbs :—These are subdivided into
 (a) Root Verbs—*molaim*, I praise, *buaílim*, I strike.
 (b) Denominative verbs, in *-uig*, *-ig*, from nouns and adjectives—*árouigim* ; *ístigim*, I lower ; and disyllabic verbs in *-il*, *-in*, *-ir*, *-is*, *-in*. The verbs in Class (a) are First Conjugation ; those in Class (b) Second Conjugation. N.B.—Verbs like *tiomáim*, with long 2nd syllable belong to 1st Conjugation. Fut. *tiomáimpeao*.

B.—Compound Verbs (135-153).

129.— A.—SIMPLE VERBS.

(a) Root verbs, *molaim*, *buaílim* (First Conjugation).

Active Voice. Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sg.

Pl.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>molaim-se</i> , <i>buaílim-se</i> | 1. <i>molaimíó-ne</i> , <i>buaílimíó-ne</i> . |
| 2. — <i>air-se</i> , — <i>ir-se</i> | 2. <i>molann sibse</i> , — <i>eann sibse</i> . |
| 3. — <i>ann seisean</i> (<i>sise</i>) | 3. — <i>air síad-san</i> , — <i>ir síad-san</i> . |
| <i>buaileann seisean</i> (<i>sise</i>). | |

Imperfect.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>do molainn-se</i> , <i>do buaílinn-se</i> | 1. <i>do molaimís-ne</i> , <i>do buaílimís-ne</i> |
| 2. „ — <i>á-sa</i> , „ — <i>éá-sa</i> | 2. „ — <i>ao sibse</i> , „ — <i>éao sibse</i> |
| 3. „ — <i>ao seisean</i> (<i>sise</i>) | 3. „ — <i>airóis sin</i> , „ — <i>íóis sin</i> |
| „ <i>buaileao</i> „ „ | |

Past.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>do molas-sa</i> , <i>do buaileas-sa</i> | 1. <i>do molamair-ne</i> , <i>do buaileamair-ne</i> |
| 2. „ — <i>ais-se</i> , „ — <i>is-se</i> | 2. „ — <i>abair-se</i> , „ — <i>éabair-se</i> . |
| 3. „ <i>mol</i> , <i>do buail seisean</i> | 3. „ — <i>adar san</i> , „ — <i>éadar san</i> . |
| (<i>sise</i>). | |

Future.**Sg.**1. mol^{rao}-sa, buail^{rao}-sa.2. —^{rair}-se, —^{fir}-se3. —^{raio}, buail^{raio} seisean (sise)**Pl.**mol^{raimio}-ne, buail^{raimio}-ne—^{raio} sibse, —^{raio} sibse—^{raio} siad^{san}, —^{raio} siad^{san}**Conditional (Secondary Future).**1. do mol^{raim}-se, do buail^{raim}-se do mol^{raimis}-ne, do buail^{raimis}-ne2. „ —^{raa}-sa, „ —^{raa}-sa „ mol^{rao} sibse, „ —^{raa} sibse3. „ —^{rao} seisean, „ —^{raa} „ —^{raiois} sin, „ —^{raiois} sin
sise.**Imperative Mood.**1. mol^{aim}-se, buail^{aim}-semol^{aimis}-nemol^{aim}-na} buail^{aimis}-ne
—eam-na

2. mol-sa, buail-se

mol^{airo}-se,—buail^{airo}-se3. mol^{ao}, buail^{ao} seisean—^{airois} sin,—^{rois} sin**Subjunctive Mood.****Present.**1. mol^{ao}-sa, buail^{ao}-samol^{aimio}-ne, buail^{aimio}-ne2. —^{air}-se, —^{ir}-se—^{airo} sibse, —^{iro} sibse3. —^{airo}, buail^{iro} seisean (sise)—^{airo} siad^{san}, —^{iro} siad^{san}**Past.**

(Same in form as Imperfect Indicative).

Passive and Autonomous.1° Pres. Indic.—mol^{tar}, buail^{tear}. Mol^{tar} é (Pass.)
he is praised (é N.) Aut.—Someone praises him
(é A).2° Past Indic.—do mol^{ao}, do buail^{ao} (Init. consonant
unaspirated).3° Impft. Indic.—do mol^{ai} (mol^{taí}, mol^{taoi}), do
buail^{ai}.4° Fut. Indic.—mol^{ar}, buail^{ar} (r. broad, at least
in many parts of Munster).5° Conditional.—(do) mol^{ai} (mol^{taoi}), (do) buail^{ai}.6° Imperative.—mol^{tar}, buail^{tear}.7° Subjunctive.—Pres.—mol^{tar}, buail^{tear}. Past.—
mol^{ai} (mol^{taoi}), buail^{ai}.

130.—

Subsidiary Forms.

The above paradigms (where three persons are given) show, of course, the emphatic forms (109). When unemphatic, drop the particles. The meaning, in some of the tenses, is *habitual*, and, in all, *absolute*; and there is direct reference to the *action*, not a *state* previous or subsequent to the action.

Verbs, however, like *deirim*, I say, *creirim*, I believe, *measaim*, I think, *sámluigim*, I fancy (2nd conjug.), *cloisim*, I hear, *cím*, I see, *tuigim*, I understand, may convey either the *actual* or the *habitual* meaning. In other verbs, the meaning may be, instead of *absolute*, *progressive* and *contemporaneous*; there may be reference, not to the *action*, but to a *state*. Hence the above paradigms must be supplemented:—

Pres. Indic.—A.—Direct reference to *action*:—(a) Contemporaneous (Habitual): 1° Active:—*bíonn sé am' molaó 7 é i láthair na mac-léiginn*—He keeps praising me, when he is with the students. 2° Passive:—*bíonn sé dá molaó acu an fáro a bío ann*—He is being praised by them all the time they are there. 3° Auton.:—*bítear am' molaó*—Someone keeps praising me.

(b) Actual:—1° Active:—*tá sé am' molaó anois*—He is praising me now. 2° Passive:—*táim dom' molaó aige*—I am being praised by him. 3° Auton.:—*tátar am' molaó (am' bualaó)*—Someone is praising (striking) me.

B.—Direct reference to *state*:—(a) Habitual:—*bíonn an coirce buailte aige nuair a sroisim-se an sgioból*—He has the oats threshed when I reach the barn (Subsequent state). (b) Actual:—*tá an cruicneacht buailte aige céana*—He has already threshed the wheat (Subsequent state). Similar distinctions occur in all the moods and tenses.

131.—Notes on the Moods and Tenses:—

1° The ending *-ann*, *-eann*, of 3 sg. pres. Indic. first appears in the prototonic forms of certain compound verbs, whence it spread gradually. O.I. *as-ren*, pays out, neg.—*ní érenn*. It was not, therefore, originally,

a personal ending at all, as -renn is the vb. root, re(n), present stem, with -n doubled.

2° The 3rd sg. rel. ending is -as, -eas. Used as 3 pl. as well, but rarely at all in Munster. The pl. forms are obsolete.

3° In 1 pl. -aimíó, -imíó, had final í short, and had no -ó.

4° The Impft. (when no other particle is used) is generally preceded by ro, which aspirates the *active* forms. In final syllable of 1 and 3 pl. í has been lengthened. (Due to assimilation in dissyllabic forms with í in penult,—ro bímís ?)

5° The ending -aó, eaó, in the finite vb., except in Pass. and Auton., is pronounced -ac, -eac. In Pass and Auton.= -as (us), -ac, -av, according to the district. In the vb. n. the -ó is silent in Munster.

6° In Past. Auton. and Pass. ro- prefixes n- to initial vowel, to distinguish from Act. forms—o'áirígeaó Seán, —S. used to hear. But—ro n-áirígeaó S.—S. was heard.

7° In the past tense the particle ro generally combines with certain other particles :—an (interrog.), ní (not), ná (conj. or neg. rel.), a (obl. rel.), go (conj. or obl. rel.), n-a (obl. rel.), muna (unless), cá (where ?), giving instead :—ar, níor, nár, ar, sur, n-ar, munar, cár.

8° But these combinations are not used with :—raib, ru, ráimis (these have ro- already); feaca (saw), fuair (found) ; sometimes with—tus (gave), táimis (came), deaḡaó (went,—by-form of deacaó) ; usually not with deacaó (went), dearna (made, did—which already contains ro-).

9° Ro- is used, in affirmative wishes (Optative Subj.) with is, and tá alone :—slán go raḃair—Thank you (ro- included in vb.). Surb amlaó óuit—The same to you. *Not* with other verbs.—ḡo n-éiríḡaó an oíóce leat—Good-night.

10° In neg. wishes ro is used with all verbs :—nára' maic asat-sa—No thanks to you. nár cúitíḡear ro saotar leat—May your exertions not be recompensed.

Raċ ná raib ort go deo—May you never have luck !
(ro- included in vb.).

132.—Verbal noun, and adjective (or participle) :—
1° Vb. noun :—moladh (G. sg., and N. pl.—molta, molta);
buadh (G. sg., and N. pl., buailte, buailte). 2° Parti-
ciple :—molta, molta ; buailte, buailte.

133.— (b)—Second Conjugation.

Active Voice. Indicative Mood.
Present.

Sg.	Pl.
1. árouiġim-se, íslġim-se, árouiġmíó-ne, íslġmíó-ne, freadġaim-se. freadġaimíó-ne.	
2. árouiġir-se, íslġir-se, árouiġeann, íslġeann, freadġair-se. freadġann (síóse).	
3. árouiġeann, íslġeann, árouiġíó, íslġíó, freadġaíó freadġann (seisean, síó san. síse).	

Imperfect.

(Same endings as in Root Verbs, 129).

Past

(Same endings as in Root Verbs, 129).

Future.

1. ároócáó-sa, íleoócáó sa, ároócám-na, íleoócám-na, freadġrócáó sa. freadġrócám-na.	
2. ároócáir-se, íleoócáir-se, ároócáíó, íleoócáíó, freadġ- freadġrócáir-se. rócáíó (síó-se).	
3. ároócáíó, íleoócáíó, ároócáíó, íleoócáíó, freadġ- freadġrócáíó (síse). rócáíó (síó san).	

Conditional.

1. ó'ároócáimn-se, ó'íleoócáimn-se, ó'freadġrócáimn-se. (Same endings as in Root Verbs, but without f-).	
---	--

Imperative

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).

Present Subjunctive.

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).

Past Subjunctive.

(Same endings as in Root Verbs).

Passive and Autonomous.

- 1° Pres. Indic. :—*árouištear, íslíštear, freatsartar.*
 2° Past Indic. :—*oo h-árouišteað, oo h-íslíšteað, oo freatsrað.*
 3° Impft. Indic. :—*oo h-árouiştí, oo h-íslíştí, oo freatsartí (-tái).*
 4° Fut. Indic. :—*ároócar (ároófar), ísleoócar (-ófar), freatsroócar (-ófar).*
 5° Conditional :—*(oo) h-ároóçtái, ísleoóçtái, freats-roóçtái (-óçtái).*
 6° Imperative :—*árouištear, íslíštear, freatsartar.*
 7° Pres. Subj. :—*(Same as Imper.).*
 8° Past Subj. :—*(Same as Impft. Indic.).*
 Vb. n.—*árouḡað, ísluḡað, freatsairt (freatsra).*
 Vb. adj.—*árouište, íslíšte, freatsarta.*

N.B.—*íslíḡim* (though its root, *iseal*, is syncopated all through) is not a syncopated verb like *freatsair*. The latter loses the vowel of its 2nd syll. when an inflection beginning with a vowel is added. *íslíḡim* is never syncopated in this way.

134 (a).—Spelling (and pronunciation) like *o'ároófá*, etc., are due to *oo ḡeoðtá* (*oo ḡeoðtar, oo ḡeoðtí*) where *ð* becomes *f* regularly, because of *t*.

(b) *freatsairt*, and other compounds of *sair*,—*asairt, tasairt, fósairt*—have two vb. n. forms. The one in *-t* is due to *taðairt*. Thus—*taðair : taðairt :: freatsair : freatsairt*. Earlier—*freatsra, asra, tasra, fósra*. These we have still, but with a different meaning. The forms in *-t* denote the name of *the action*; those in *-a* the *objective content* of the action :—*'Sé freatsra fudair sé*, The answer he got was *fósra*—proclamation, etc. *asra*—a claim. *tasra*—a reference, etc.

B.—Compound Verbs.

135.—In most so-called irregular verbs, the “irregularity” is chiefly due to the fact that they are **compound**, and appear in two different forms :—

(a) The **Deuterotonic**, *i.e.*, with stress on second syllable :—*do-bèirim*, *adèirim*, *do-ḡèibim*.

(b) The **Prototonic**, *i.e.*, with stress on first syllable :—*càbraidm*, *àbraidm*, *fàḡaidm*.

There will, therefore, generally be two forms in the paradigms :—the **Absolute** (generally deuterotonic) and the **Dependent** (always prototonic). The **Dependent** form is used after the **Conjunct Particles** :—

1° The **negatives** :—*ní*, *níor*, *naċ*, *ná*, *nár*, *muna*, *munar*.

2° The **interrogatives** :—*an*, *ar*, *naċ*, *ná*, *nár*.

3° The **oblique relatives** :—*a*, *ar*, *so sur*, *n-a*, *n-ar*.

4° The **compound relative** :—*a*, *ar*.

5° The **conjunctions** :—*so*, *sur*, *da* (if).

136.—Several **roots** are sometimes needed (Cf. Eng. *go*, *went* ; *am*, *be*, *was*) :—

1° *ta* employs the roots :—*stā* (L. *adstare*, Eng. *stand*) ; *bhu* (L. *fui*) ; *uel* (I. *fuil*, W. *gweled*, to see, O.I. *fil-us*, they are (*Lit.*—behold them)).

2° *do-bèirim*, I give, bring, etc., employs the roots :—*bher* (L. *fero*, E. *bear*) ; *ug* (O.I. *-ucc*)—*cugas*.

3° *céigim*, I go, employs the roots :—*steigh*—*céigim* (E. *ve—stige*) ; *reg.*—*raḡad*, O.I. *rega* ; *erg*—*éirig* *a* *coirad*—go to bed (O.I. *eirgg*). Now confused with *éirig*, rise ; *vb. n.*—*out* ; *ued*, in 3 sg. pres. Indic. and in the past Indic.

137.—

I.—*céigim*, I go.

Indicative.

Pres.—Sg.—1. *céigim-se*, etc. (with usual endings).

Pl.—1. *céigmíó-ne*, etc.

Impft.—Sg.—1. *do céiginn-se* (with usual endings).

Pl.—1. *do céigmís-ne*, etc.

Past.—Absolute :—**Sg.**—*do cuadhas* (*cuas*)-*sa*, *do cuadhas-se*, *do cuair seisean* (*sise*).

Pl.—*do cuadhamair-ne* (*cuamair-ne*) etc. (usual endings).

Past.—Dependent :—Sg.—*deigeas-sa* (*deacas*) (see 139), *deigis-se*, *deagair seisean* (*sise*).

Pl.—*deigeamair-ne*, etc. (usual endings).

Fut.—Sg.—*ragad-sa* (*rac . . .*), *ragair-se*, *ragair seisean*.

Pl.—*ragmíó-ne*, etc. (as usual).

Cond.—Sg.—(*oo*) *ragaimn-se* (as usual). Pl.—(*oo*) *ragaimis-ne*, *ragad sibse*, *ragairóis sin*.

Autonomous Forms.

Pres. Indic., Imper., and Pres. Subj.—*ceigtear*.
 Impft. Indic.—*ceigti*. Fut. Indic.—*ragfar*. Cond.—*ragfi*.
 Past Indic.—*oo cuadcas*; *níor deigteas*.
 Past Subj.—*ceigti*.

138.—Vb. n.—*out*. Participle—*mtigte* (*outa* as Participle of Necessity (293A.)). Imper. Act.—*ceigm-se*, *ceirig-se*, *ceigeaó seisean*; *ceigmis-ne*, etc. (as usual).
 Pres. Subj. :—*ceigeaó-sa* (like *buaiteaó*). Past Subj.—*ceiginnse* (like *buaíinn*).

139.—Notes :—1° The 3 sg. pres. Indic. was, in O.I. *tét* (i.e. *céro*, still used in U.). The root is *ued*, also found in past tense. *Ceigeann* is modelled on the other persons (root,—*steigh*). 2° *Deigeas* (*deacas*)—Munster—is analogical. *Oo cuair* when prototonic gives *deacair* (U. and Conn.). The Munster form is due to the fut. *ragair*, while the U. and Conn. fut. *racair* is due to *deacair*.

140.— II.—*ceim* (*ragaim*), I come.

Pres. Indic.—*ceim-se*, *ragaim-se*, etc. Pl.—*ceimíó-ne*, *ragaimíó-ne*, etc.

Impft. Indic.—(*oo*) *ceimn-se*, *ragaimn-se*, etc. Pl.—(*oo*) *ceimis-ne*, *ragaimis-ne*, etc.

Past Indic.—(*oo*) *cánas-sa* (*cána-sa*), *cánaís-se*, *cáinig seisean*. Pl.—(*oo*) *cánamair-ne*, *cánaóair-se*, *cánaóar san* (*cánasóar*).

Future.—*ciocfaó-sa*, etc. Pl.—*ciocfaimíó-ne*, etc. (usual endings).

Conditional.—(ro) tíoḃḃaimn-se, etc. Pl. (ro) tíoḃḃaimís-ne, etc. (usual endings).

Imperative.—tíḃim-se (táḃaim-se), tair-se, tíḃeāḃ (táḃeāḃ) seiseān (sise). Pl.—tíḃimís-ne (táḃaimís-ne), etc. (usual endings).

Pres. Subj.—tíḃeāḃ-sa (táḃeāḃ-sa), etc. Pl. tíḃimíḃ-ne (táḃaimíḃ-ne), etc.

Past Subj.—tíḃimn-se (táḃaimn-se)—same as Impft. Indic. without ro.

Vb. noun.—teāḃt (G. teāḃta); O.I. tuidecht (from do-tiag) and tichtu (from do-icc). We still have tíḃeāḃt (tuíḃeāḃt) esp. in poetry.—ḃoḃḃairí na tíre áḡ tíḃeāḃt áḡ á ḡcāpáil (An Spáilpín fánaḃ).

Participle.—tíḃte, táḃta, táḃaithe.

Pres. Auton.—tíḃteāḡ, táḃtaḡ. Impft.—tíḃtí, táḃtí.

Past „ tánaḃas. Fut.—tíoḃḃaḡ. Conditional.—tíoḃfí.

Imper. „ tíḃteāḡ, tíḃteāḡ, táḃtaḡ, táḃtaḡ.

Subj. „ Pres.— „ „ „ „
Past.—tíḃtí, tíḃtí, táḃtí.

Notes.

1° Pres. Indic.—Deuteronic forms are lost, as in all the other tenses. (O.I. do-icc, etc.). Táḡ- comes from tíḡ- through teāḡ-. The short form tíḡ in 3 sg. is mostly used in—tíḡ le. . . . ní tíḡ le—can, cannot.

2° Past.—ánaḡ is the preterital stem corresponding to -íḡ (O.I. -icc). 2nd sg. also written tánaḡais, but the ḡ is silent in uíḃ laḡḡaire and Corca Ųuíḃne. It is silent also in pl.

3° Fut.—-c- comes from -ḡ- under influence of ḡ (=n), and is *broad* and *written* c (not ḡ).

4° Condit.—Here “c” remains in 2 sg., although “ḡ” is pronounced “ḡ” and not “n.” The same remark applies to tíoḃḃaḡ, tíoḃfí (Aut.).

5° Imper.—The 2 sg. tair is from—either (a) to-air-icc, or (b) rethim (ríḃim), like fóir, help.

III.—*im̃c̃iḡim*, I go away.

141.—In form, a compound of *teḡim* (vb. n. *im-teačt*). But it has passed over to the *-iḡ* class. Fut.—*im̃teočao-sa*, etc. Cond.—*o'im̃teočaimn-se*, etc.

Many other verbs, too, have passed over to the *-iḡ* class, with *-óc-*, *-eoč-* in fut. and cond.—*iompuḡim*, I turn (O.I. 3 sg. *im-soí*). But vb. n.—*iompóò* (*iompáil*). *tearnuḡim*, I depart, die, steal away, etc. Vb. n. *tearnam̃* (<*sníom̃*), *tearnóò* (anal. from *iompóò*). *éirḡim*, I rise (root *reg*). Vb. n.—*éirḡe*. *ḡiaḡruḡim*, I enquire. Vb. n. *ḡiaḡraíòe*. *teangm̃uḡim* (*teagm̃uḡim*), I meet, happen, chance (Compound of *-iḡ*). Vb. n.—*teangm̃áil*, *teangbáil* (owing to *ḡabáil*). *teastuḡim*, I am wanting, missed, needful to ; I die, etc. Vb. n.—*teastáil*, *teastabáil*. In U.I. MSS. common in the sense of “die.” —*Ṫáir̃o ḡir̃ lunoam̃ ḡañ c̃ontab̃air̃c̃ ó teastaiḡ* (Elegy on *Eoghan Ruadh Ó Néill*)—the London men (the English in Ireland) are out of danger since he died.

IV.—*oo-ḡeib̃im*, I get, find.

142.—Pres. Indic.—*oo-ḡeib̃im-se*, etc. (Absolute).

ḡaḡaim-se, etc. (Dependent).

Impft. Indic.—*oo-ḡeib̃imn-se*, etc. (Absolute). *ḡaḡaimn-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Past Indic.—*ḡuaras-sa*, etc. (the same in Dependent).

Fut. Indic.—*oo-ḡeobaò-sa*, etc. (Abs.). *ḡuḡeaò-sa*, etc. (Dependent).

Condit.—*oo-ḡeob̃aimnse*, etc. (Abs.). *ḡuḡimn-se*, etc. (Dependent).

Imper.—*ḡaḡaim-se*, *ḡaiḡ-se*, *ḡaḡaò seisean*, *ḡaiḡm̃is-ne*, *ḡaiḡíò-se*, *ḡaiḡóis sin*.

Subj.—Pres.—*ḡaḡaò-sa*, etc. (usual endings).

Past.—Same as *Dependent* Impft. Indic.

Auton.—Pres. Indic.—*oo-ḡeib̃tear* (Abs.). *ḡačtar* (*ḡaḡtar*) Dep.

Impft. Indic.—*oo-ḡeib̃tí* (Abs.). *ḡačtí* (*ḡaiḡtí*) Dep.

Past Indic.—Abs. and Dep.—*ḡuartaas*, *ḡr̃iç*, *ḡuaraò*.

Fut. Indic.—*ro-geobtar* (Abs.). *fuigfar* (*fuig-tear*) Dep.

Condit.—*ro-geobtaoi* (-*taí*, -*tí*. Abs.). *fuigfi*, *fuigtí* Dep.

Imper.—*faictar*, *faictar*. Pres. Subj. the same. Past.—*faictí*, *faictí*.

Vb. n.—*faigáil*, G. *faigála* (<*ro-geabála*).

Notes.

1° The deuterotonic forms come from *ro-geib-*, the prototonic form *ro-geab-*. The slender *-geib-* is due to the reduplicated fut. stem *geob-* (O.I. *géb-*).

2° *ro-* is often dropped in the absol. forms (*g* retaining its aspiration). It is kept usually in rel. clauses, assuming the function of a relative.

3° *faigám* < *ro-geabám*. Sometimes spelled *faigbám*, but needlessly, as *-b-* is lost in speech. *g* is necessary—to denote the *diphthong*.

4° *fuigeao* < *ro-geobao* is pronounced, in Munster, as *faigao* (Subj. < *ro-geabao*). This leads to the widespread confusion between Condit. and past Subj.

5° In mod. I. (as in O.I.) the vb. n., participle and imper. are prototonic (except in Munster, in vbs. like *tiomáim*, with 1st syll. short, 2nd long. Here the long vowel attracts the accent).

6° *faictar* < *faictar*, where *t*=*n* unvoices *g*, giving *c* (*τ*- being then restored).

V.—*geabám*, I take, go, etc.

143.—A *simple* verb, found in preceding *compound*. It has an *é*- fut. *geobao* (earlier, *gébao* ; *g*, unaspirated). The neg. and interrog. forms are :—*ní geobao*, *an ngeobao sé?* etc., as compared with *ní bfuigeao*, *an bfuigro sé*, of the compound (IV). In *ní bfuaras*, *ní* seems to eclipse. It does not. It aspirates *f*, as usual, and *b* comes, not from *f*-, but from *u*. I.e., it is a *consonantal glide* from *i* to *ú*. Then all the prototonic forms take *b*- after *ní* by analogy. (Except in Pass. and Auton. where *ní* does not aspirate—*ní faictar*, *ní fuartas*).

144.— VI.—**Do-ḡnīm, I do, make.**

Pres. Indic.—**do-ḡnīm-se, do-ḡnīr-se, do ḡníonn seisean** (Abs.) **ḡéanam-se, etc.** (Dep.—**ḡeim-se, etc.** Munster)

Pl.—**do-ḡnīmíō-ne, do-ḡníonn síb-se, do-ḡníō síadōsan** (Abs.) **ḡéanamíō-ne, etc.** (Dep.).—**ḡeimimíō-ne** (Munster).

Impft. Indic.—**do-ḡnīnn-se, do-ḡníteā-sa, do ḡníōḡ seisean** (Abs.) **do-ḡnīmís-ne, do ḡníōḡ síb-se, do-ḡníōís sīn** (Abs.) **ḡéanamīnn-se** (**ḡeimīnn-se, Munster**), etc. (usual endings. Dep.)

Past Indic.—**do rinneas-sa, do rinnís-se, do-rinne seisean** (Abs.) **do rinneamair-ne, do-rinneadāir-se, do-rinneadōar san** (Abs.) **ḡearnas-sa, ḡearnais-se, ḡearna** (**ḡearnaiō**) **seisean** (Dep.) **ḡearnamair-ne, etc.** (usual endings) Dep.

Fut.—Abs. and Dep.—**ḡéanfaō-sa, etc.** (usual endings).

Condit.—(**do**) **ḡéanfaīnn-se, etc.** (**ní**) **ḡéanfaīnn-se, etc.**

Imperat.—**ḡeim-se** (**ḡéanam-se**), etc. (as usual).

Subj.—Pres.—**ḡeineā-sa** (**ḡéanaō-sa**), etc. Past.—**ḡeimīnnse** (**ḡéanamīnnse**), etc.

Auton. (and Pass.) :—

Pres. Indic.—**do ḡnítear** (Abs.). **ḡeimtear** (**ḡéantar**). Dep.

Impft. Indic.—**do ḡnícī** (Abs.). **ḡeimcī** (**ḡéantcī**). (Dep.)

Past Indic.—**do rinneaō** (Abs.). **ḡearnaō**. (Dep.)

Fut. Indic.—**ḡéanfar**. Condit.—**ḡéanfí** (**ḡéanfaoi**).

Imper. and Pres. Subj.—**ḡeimtear** (**ḡéantar**). Past Subj.—**ḡeimcī** (**ḡéantcī**).

Notes.

1° In Munster I. the pres. stem is usually **ḡeim-** (also in Impft. Indic., Imper., Subj.) **ḡéan-** being reserved for Fut. and Condit. (on analogy of **beir-** pres. stem, **béar-** fut.).

2° The pres. and impft. Indic. abs. forms are nearly obsolete in Munster.

3° Instead of the past Indic. as in paradigm, **ḡeineas-sa, etc.**, are usual in Munster, both Abs. and Dep.

4° The deuterotonic forms of the fut. are now seldom used. The fut. and condit. show a blend of two types—

the é- fut., and the r (or b-) fut.—ro ghéanad, or ro ghéan, and ro-ghéanfad, déanfad. K. often has ro déan, instead of ro ghéan, owing to the prototonic forms.

5° In past Aut., instead of ro rinnead, etc., ro dainead, níor dainead, etc., are usual in Munster.

6° Vb. n.—déanam (G.—déanta). Participle—déanta.

145.— VII.—**beirim** (and Compounds). I bear, I carry.

Pres. Indic.—beirim-se, etc.

Impft. Indic.—(ro) beirinn-se, etc. Past.—rugas-sa, etc.

Fut. Indic.—béarfad-sa, etc. Condit.—(ro) béarfaimn-se, etc.

Imper.—beirim-se, beir-se, etc. Subj.—Pres.—beiread-sa, etc.

Past Subj.—beirinn-se, etc.

Aut. and Pass :—

Pres. Indic.—beirtear (-tear). Impft.—beirtí (beirtí).

Past.—rugad. Fut.—béarfad. Cond.—béarfí (-faí).

Imper.—beirtear (-tear).

Pres. Subj.—beirtear (-tear). Past.—beirtí (-tí).

Notes.

1° The past tense is a compound of ro and -us (O.I. -ucc). Cf.—rug.

2° The fut. (primary, and secondary) is a blend of the é- fut. and the r- fut. K. ro béar : mod. ro béarfad.

Vb. n.—breic (G.—beirte). Participle.—beirte.

146.— VIII.—**Do-beirim**, I give, bring, etc.

Pres. Indic.—ro beirim-se, etc. (Abs.). tabraim-se, etc. (Dep.).

Impf. Indic.—ro beirinn-se, etc. (Abs.) tabraimn-se, etc. (Dep.).

Past Indic.—(ro) rugas-sa, etc.—(Abs. and Dep.).

Fut. Indic.—ro béarfad-sa, etc. (Abs.). tabarfad-sa, etc. (Dep.).

Condit.—ro béarfaimn-se, etc. (Abs.). tabarfaimn-se, etc. (Dep.).

Imper.—*tuḡaim-se* (τᾰḃṛaimse), *τᾰḃḃair-se*, *tuḡaḃ* (τᾰḃ-*raḃ*) *seisean*.

tuḡaimis-ne (τᾰḃṛaimis ne), *tuḡaḃ-se* (τᾰḃṛaḃ-se),
tuḡaḃois (τᾰḃṛaḃois) *sin*.

Subj.—*tuḡaḃ-sa* (τᾰḃṛaḃ-sa), etc. **Past.**—*tuḡaimn-se* (τᾰḃṛaimn-se), etc.

Vb. n.—*τᾰḃḃairt* (G.—τᾰḃḃartḃa). **Participle.**—*τᾰḃḃartḃa*, *tuḡḃa*.

Pass. (and Auton.) :—

Pres. Indic.—*ḃo ḃeirḃear*, *τᾰḃṛḃear*, *tuḡṛar* (Munster).

Impft.—*ḃo ḃeirḃí*, *τᾰḃṛḃaí*, *tuḡṛí* (Munster).

Past.—*ḃo tuḡaḃ*. **Fut.**—*ḃo ḃéarḃar*, *τᾰḃṛḃar*.

Condit.—*ḃo ḃéarḃí*, *τᾰḃṛḃí* (-ḃaí).

Imper.—*tuḡṛar* (Munster) ; *τᾰḃṛḃear*.

Subj.—*tuḡṛar* (Munster) ; *τᾰḃṛḃear* (Pres.).

tuḡṛí („) ; *τᾰḃṛḃaí* (Past.).

Notes.

1° *τᾰḃṛaim* is the regular prototonic form of *ḃo-ḃeirim*. Instead of this, a present formed from the perf. stem *tuḡ-* is much used in Munster, not only as dep. but also abs. *ḃeirim-se*, etc., are used (but with *ḃ-*) in asseverations like—*ḃeirim-se a ḃurḃeacas leis an ḃḃair Síorurḃe* (Séarḃna)—I thank the Eternal Father for it.

2° In the Impft.—the Munster forms are :—*ḃo tuḡaimn-se*, etc., instead of those given in the paradigm.

3° The vb. n. was at first *τᾰḃḃart*, but even in O.I. *tabairt* also is used as nominative.

147.— IX.—*ḃeirim* (ḃḃeirim), I say.

Absolute.

Relative.

Dependent.

Pres. Indic.

ḃeirim-se, etc.

ḃḃeirim-se, etc.

ḃṛaim-se, etc.

Impft. Indic.

ḃeirinn-se, etc.

ḃḃeirinn-se, etc.

ḃṛaimnse, *ḃḃartḃa-sa*, etc.

Past Indic.

1. *ḃḃartḃa-sa*

2. *ḃḃṛaís-se*

3. *ḃḃḃairt*

seisean

ḃḃḃartḃa-sa, etc.

(Same as Absolute).

(Usual endings in pl.)

Fut. Indic.

<i>Absolute.</i>	<i>Relative.</i>	<i>Dependent</i>
deárfad-sa, etc.	doéarfad-sa, etc.	abrócad-sa, etc.
	Condit.	
deárfaimn-se, ,,	doéarfaimn-se, ,,	abrócaimn-se, ,,
	Imper.	
abram-se, abair-se, abrað seisean, etc.	<i>Always prototonic.</i>	

Pres. Subj.—abrað-sa, etc. Past Subj.—abramn-se, etc.

Autonomous (and Passive) :—Indic.—Pres.—deirtear (abs.), doeirtear (direct rel.), abartar (dep.). Impft.—deirtí, doeirtear, abartí. Past.—dubrað, doubrað ; dubrtas, doubrtas. Fut.—deárfar, doéarfár, abróctar (abrófar). Condit.—deárfí, doéarfí, abróctai (abrófí). Imperat. and pres. Subj.—abartar. Past Subj.—abartí. Vb. n.—ráð (G. ráirte). Participle—ráirte, abarta.

Notes.

1° The deirim forms resist aspiration :—ní deirim ; I do not say ; isé deirim, this is what I say. They are nearly always used as dep. forms in Munster in all the tenses of the indic.

2° The rel. forms are *direct* only. *Oblique*. rels. take the dep. forms :—an té go n-abartar air, he of whom people say. But in Munster, also :—an té go ndeirtear air (see note 1°).

3° Instead of deireann (3. sg. and 2 pl.) a short form deir is common in Munster.

4° doubart (O.I. as-ru-burt) shows confusion of do- and as, and substitution of do- for ro-. The 2 sg. is an s- preterite, 1 and 3 sg. t- preterites ; but both s- and t- are dropped in pl.

5° The vb. n. in O.I. was eper (now abairt=speech, phrase).

X.—Toirbhirim, I deliver, present, etc.

148.—A compound of beirim, but conjugated as a simple vb. The vb. n. is toirbheart, toirbirt. Fóbraim, I attack, begin, etc. is another comp. of beir, now treated as a simple vb. with vb. n. fóbairt.

XI.—(Do)-cím, I see.

Absolute.

Pres. Indic.—cím-se, cír-se, cionn seisean.
 címið-ne, cionn siðse, cíð siðð san.

Dependent.

feicím-se, etc. (regular endings).

Absolute.

Impft. Indic.—cinn-se (etc.—but cíorð- in 3 sg., 2 pl.).

Dependent.

feicinn-se, etc. (regular endings).

Absolute.

Past Indic.—do connac-sa	} Pl. do connacamaíR-ne.
„ connaicís-se	
„ connaic seisean	

etc. (regular endings)

Dependent.

feaca-sa, feacaís-se, feacaið seisean.
 feacamaíR-ne, etc.

Absolute.

Fut. Indic.—cifeað-sa, etc. (regular endings).

Dependent.

feicfeað-sa, etc.

Condit.—cifrinn-se, etc. (regular endings).
 feicfrinn-se, etc.

Imperat.—feicím-se, feic-se, etc. (usual endings).

Always prototonic.

Pres. Subj.—feiceað-sa, etc. Past.—feicinn-se, etc.

Always prototonic.

Pass. and Auton.—Indic.—Pres.—cítear, feicítear.

Impft.—cítí, feicítí.

Past.—do connactas, feactas. Fut.—cifar, feicfar.

Condit.—cífí, feicfí.

Vb. n.—feiscint (feicsint). G.—feisceana, feicseana, F.

Participle.—feicte.

Notes.

1° *Ĉim-se*, etc., are for *vo-ĉim-se*, etc. O.I. 3 sg. was *av-cí*, from the prototonic form of which come the dep. forms (with *ř-* added). *řeicim-se* is for *řaicim-se*. Cf. O.I. *maic* > *meic*, *mic*.

2° Besides *vo connac*, *vo connacas*, and *vo connarcas* (root *vearc-*) occur. *řeaca* (Munster), *řaca* (*řacas*) is a reduplicated perfect (with *ř-* added. <*ad-ce-cha*).

3° *řeiscim* (O.I. *aiccsiu*, G. *aiccsen*, D. *aiccsin*) shows init. *ř-*, change of *-aic-* to *-eic-* metathesis of *c* and *s*, and addition of a final *-t*.

XII.—*Cloisim, cluinim, I hear.*

149.—Now simple, regular vbs. O.I. *ro-cluinethar*. Past Indic.—*vo cloiseas*, *vo clumeas*, and also (*vo*) *cuala* (*vo-cualas*) from O.I. perft. *ro-cuala*. Vb. n.—*clos*, *cloisim*, *cloistim*; *clumsim* (due to *řeic-sim*).

XIII.—*Riřim, roicim, I reach.*

150.—*Riřim* < O.I. *ro-icc* (cf. *do-icc* = mod. *tig-*). The aspirated *-ř-* may be due to *roicim*. Past Indic.—*ránas* (cf. *tánas*). Vb. n.—*riactaim*, *roctaim*.—*Roichim* < O.I. *ro-saig*, reaches—*řus a roiceann saibbreas* (T.B.B.)—to whom wealth comes. Vb. n.—*roctaim*. We now use *sroicim*, *sroisim*, conjugated as simple verbs. Vb. n.—*sroicim*, *sroisim*.

XIV.—*icim, I eat.*

151.—Fut.—*iosav-sa* (*iosřav-sa*), etc. Condit.—*o'iosaimn-se*, etc. Vb. n. *ite* (*not iteav*), G.—*itce*. Participle—*itce*. The fut. is the only example remaining of the *s-* Fut.

XV.—*řeavar, I know.*

152.—The only *deponent* vb. in mod. I. (O.I. *ro-fitir*, knows). Used only in neg. or virtually neg. sentences, and with either past or pres. meaning. 3 sg. past, *řeoir* (common in Munster). Conjugation :—*řeavar-sa*, *řeavrais-se*, *řeavar* (*řeoir*) *seisean*.—*řeavramair-ne*, *řeavarabair-se*, *řeavaravar-san*. Vb. n.—*řios*, G. *řasa*.

XVI.—**ἔαίμ, I am (Substantive Verb).**

153.—Indic.—Actual pres.—ἔαίμ-se, ἔαοι-se, ἔά seisean.—ἔαίμιο-ne, ἔάτᾱοι-se, ἔάρο σιάο san (these are the abs. forms). Dep.—ἔαίμιο-ne, etc., but ἔαί, in 3 sg. and 2 pl.

Habitual pres.—ἔαίμ-se, ἔαίρ-se, ἔαίον seisean ; ἔαίμιο-ne, ἔαίον σίῃ-se (ἔαί), ἔαί σιάο san. (Abs. and Dep.).

Impft.—(οο) ἔαίμ-se, ἔαίτᾱ-sa, ἔαίρο seisean ; (οο) ἔαίμ-is-ne, ἔαίρο σίῃ-se, ἔαίρο is sin. (Abs. and —without οο—Dep.).

Past abs.—(οο) ἔαί-sa, ἔαί-se, ἔαί seisean ; (οο) ἔαίμαίρ-ne, ἔαίῶμαίρ-se, ἔαίῶμαίρ-san. Dep.—ἔαί-sa, etc. But 3 sg.—ἔαί.

Fut.—ἔαί-sa, ἔαίρ-se, ἔαίρο seisean ; ἔαίμιο-ne, ἔαίρο σίῃ-se, ἔαίρο σιάο san. (Abs. and Dep.).

Condit.—(οο) ἔαίμ-se, ἔαίτᾱ-sa, ἔαίρο seisean ; (οο) ἔαίμ-is-ne, ἔαίρο σίῃ-se, ἔαίρο is sin (Abs. and—without οο—Dep.).

Imperat.—ἔαίμ-se, ἔαί-se, ἔαίρο seisean ; ἔαίμ-is-ne, ἔαίρο-se, ἔαίρο is sin.

Pres. Subj.—ἔαί-sa, ἔαίμαίρ-se, ἔαί seisean ; ἔαίμιο-ne, ἔαί σίῃ-se (ἔαίτᾱ) ἔαίμαίρ σιάο san.

Past Subj.—ἔαίμ-se, ἔαίτᾱ-sa, ἔαίρο seisean ; ἔαίμ-is-ne, ἔαίρο σίῃ-se, ἔαίρο is sin.

Autonomous :—Pres. Indic.—ἔάτᾱ, ἔαίτᾱ (Actual) ; ἔαίτᾱ (Hab.). Impft.—ἔαί. Past.—οο ἔάτᾱ (abs.) ; ἔάτᾱ (dep.). Fut.—ἔαίτᾱ. Condit.—ἔαί. Imperat.—ἔάτᾱ. Pres. Subj.—ἔάτᾱ. Past.—ἔαί, ἔαί.

Vb. n.—ἔαί (ἔ-).

Participle.—ἔάτᾱ (mostly as *Part. of Necessity*).

Notes.

1° The neg. forms of ἔαί- are ἔαίμ-se, etc. (<ní ἔαίμ-se). Auton.—ἔάτᾱ.

2° Instead of ἔαοι, there is also ἔαίρ, and ἔά tú ; instead of ἔάτᾱοι, ἔά σίῃ.

3° The spelling ἔαίμ-se, ἔαίμ-se, is wrong.

4° In the Past abs.—1, 2 sg. and all the pl. forms are re-constructions from 3 sg. (O.I. boí, baí>ἔαί). The dep. forms are near O.I. enclitic forms :—1 sg.—·roba (we

have added -s) ; 3 sg. ·robae, ·rabae (early mod. *raibē*, now *raib*) ; 1 pl. ·robammar, 2.—·robaid (now *raibaid*), 3.—·robatar, ·rabatar.

5° The short vowels of Fut. and Condit. (as found in Munster) reflect, not O.I. 1st and 2nd. Fut., but O.I. pres. and past Subj. Some of their uses are clearly Subj. E.g.—*fan go mberò sé annso*—Wait till he be here (Subj. of indefinite time). Cf. *fan go rtagairò sé*—Wait until he come. Here, however, U.I. uses the *ro-* Subj.—*fan go raib (=raib) sé annseo*.—*Óá mbeaó sé annso*—If he were here (The mod. classical usage requires *the past Subj.* after *óá*).

6° The past Subj. forms—*binn*, etc., given in many books, are altogether spurious, and should not be tolerated. The vb. *ta* is, in fact, the only vb. (if we except *is*.—See 154) in which the past Subj. is not the same as the Impft. Indic.

XVII.—The Copula (*is*).

154.—Pres. Indic.—Sg. and pl.—*is* (in all persons). Abs. Dep.—*ab, b* (see *Notes*, 2³). Or the vb. disappears.

Impft. and Past :—Abs.—Sg. and pl.—*ba* (all persons); *b'* before vowel or *f*. Dep.—*ba* (see *Notes*, 5), *b'* (before vowel, or *f*), or the vb. disappears.

Fut.—Now nearly obsolete. I once heard, near *Céim an fíair* (W. Cork)—*má bus tíom é*, if it will be mine.

Condit.—*ba, baó*, sg. and pl. all persons, Abs. *ba, b'*—or disappears (Dep.).

Pres. Subj.—*ba, ab, a'*, sg. and pl.

Past Subj.—*baó, ba, b'* (before vowels), sometimes *ba n-* sg. and pl., all persons.

Notes.

1° All extant forms of *is* are, etymologically 3 sg. Syntactically, of course, they may be 1st, 2nd, or 3rd person. Such lists as :—1. *is mé*, I am. 2. *is tu*, thou art. 3. *is é*, he is—are absurd. The pronouns here are predicates, not subjects, and the vb. given as 1st or 2nd person is, *de facto*, syntactically 3rd, while the vb. given as 3rd person may be 1st or 2nd.—*is mé a ví ann* (Subj.—*an té a ví ann*.—3rd person). *is tu fé nōéar é*

(Subj.—*an té fé nðear é.*—3rd person). *1s é an ðiaðal tu* (Subj. *tu*, 2nd person) !

2° The dep. form pres. disappears after :—(a) *ní*, (*ní n-* before vowel). (b) *nac*. (c) *an ?* (d) *sur* (before consonants, and sometimes before vowels) (e) *muran* (= *muna*) before consonants (f) oblique rel. before consonants.

3° It appears as *-b*, *-ab* after *sur* (sometimes before vowels), *nár*, opt. subj. before vowels (as *á'* before consonants) *muna* (before vowels), the oblique relatives *ar*, *sur*, *n-ar* (before vowels).

4° *ðað*, as past tense is wrong. It should be *ba*. Condit. *bað* is permissible, though *ba* is more usual. The Impft. is ignored by other mod. Grammars.

5° In the dep. past *ba* generally combines with preceding *ro*, giving *'rð* (before vowels) ; before consonants, it disappears, but aspirates. When *ro* is not used *ba* (*bu*) appears before consonants—*an ðfeær á mbu leis í* (n. n§. p. 21)—the man who owned it.

6° The pres. subj. is usually *-b*, *ab*.—*surb amlarð ðuit*—the same to you ! But in U. and W'ford I. *ba* is common: *so mba hé ðuit* (U.)—the same to you. *so mba n-amlarð ðuit* (W'f'd.). In the opt. subj. *sura'*, *nára'* are common before consonants—*sura' fearroe tu é*—may you be the better of it.

7° Past subj.—*ðá mba máit teat é*—if you wished it. *ðá mb'áit leis é*—if he so wished. *ðá mba n-é á ðeað ann*—if it had been he.

8° There is no vb. n. The want is supplied thus :—*saðart iseað me, 7 is fearr liom san, ná mé ðeit am' ðoóctúir*—I am a priest, and I prefer that to *being a doctor*.

155.— XVIII.—Remains of Compound Verbs.

1° See exx. in 141.

2° *íððbraim* (*íðbrim*), I sacrifice. A comp. of *ðeirim*, vb. n.—*íðððairt* (*íððirt*).

3° *fuilingim*, I suffer (O.I. 3 sg. *fo-loing*). Now a simple syncopated vb. (2nd conj.). Fut.—*fuilingeoðao* (*fuiliceoðao*). Vb. n.—*fulang*, *fulag*, *fuiling*, and U. *fuilstim*.

4° *Ṭarṇaim*—I bark at, urge, etc., vb. n. *ṭarṇann*, *ṭaṭaimṭ*, was a compound also. (O.I. *do-seinn*, drives).

5° *Ṣoluiḡim*—I hide, cover, < *ṣo* + *tuḡim*, I lay (lie) under. Vb. n. *ṣolac*. Now conjugated as a simple vb.

6° *Ṣaisnéisim* (*aisnéisim*), I predicate, etc. < O.I. vb. n.—*aisndís* (< *as-ind-et*, relates). Now treated as *simple*. Vb. n. *aisnéis*, *ṣaisnéis*.

7° *Ḍoláicim*, *Ḍónaicim*—I bury, vb. n.—*Ḍolacaḍ*, *Ḍolacan*, *Ḍónacaḍ*. *Ḍolacan* comes (by metathesis of *l* and *n*) from *Ḍó-anacul* (O.I. *aingid*, protects).

8° *Cúimrouḡim*—I defend, cover, etc., vb. n.—*cúimroac* (< O.I. *cumtach*, vb. n. of *con-utuing*, builds).

9° *Ṭarla*—happened, < O.I. *.tarla* < *do-rala* (*ro-la*) has the two preps. *ro*, and *ro*.

10° *Tuicim*, I fall, vb. n.—*id*. O.I. 3 sg. *do-tuit*. The old perfect *torcáir* occurs in poetry. It comes from *do-cer*, *do-ro-chair*. The root “*cer*” is seen in *críon* (*crín*), withered. Cf. O.I. *ara-chrin*—perishes, and L. *cernuus*, with face towards earth, bowing, etc.

11° *Coimeáḍaim*, I keep < O.I. *comét*, vb. n. of the obsolete compound *con.óí*, keeps. U.I. vb. n. *coimeáḍ*. In Munster *c-* is usually slender.

12° *Ionmarbaim*, I banish, is a compound of O.I. *ben-*.

CHAPTER VI.

ADVERBS, Etc.

156.—An Adverb is a word or phrase or clause used to modify the meaning of words expressing action or quality. The modification is various, giving the following classes of adverbs :—A.—Modal. B.—Local. C.—Temporal. D.—Interrogative. E.—Causal. F.—Negative. G.—Quantitative. H.—Multiplicative. I.—Asseverating. J.—Concessive.

157.—A.—Modal Adverbs :—

1° Formed from adjectives by prefixing the prep. *so* (see **159** 1°)—*so maĩt*, well ; *so h-olc*, badly ; *so vána*, boldly ; *so breas bog*, very easily. But the adj. without *so* is often adverbial :—*nĩ ouðairt sé na focail tom vĩreac mar a teastuĩg uata* (CMD. 333)—He did not say the words *precisely* as they wanted. *ĩos bog é*—take things easily. Participles are preceded by *so*, only when the participial meaning is obscured or lost.—*abair amac é so h-oscailte* (CMO. 333)—Say it out openly.

2° From nouns :—*'na suĩoe*, up (out of bed) ; *cor ar bĩt*, at all ; *ar an gcuma san*, thus ; *ar éĩgm váis*, with the greatest difficulty ; *ĩ n-aisge*, free, gratis ; *oe geĩt*, suddenly ; *ĩn-aisgear*, in vain ; *ar soðar*, at a trot ; *nĩĩm ar buile ná ar báĩmĩoe*, I'm not in the least bit furious.

3° Adverbial prefixes :—*An* (ana), very ; *so h-ana-maĩt*, very well ; *bĩt*, lasting ; *bĩt-buan*, everlasting ; *buan*, lasting ; *buan-tseasmac*, persevering ; *leac*, half ; *so leac-amavánta*, half-foolishly.

4° From pronouns :—*amĩlarĩ*, thus ; *mar sm*, like that ; *leĩs*, also ; *ĩreĩsm* (Conn.), also.

B.—Local Adverbs :—

(a).—The Point	Rest at	Motion towards	Motion from
1. Here.	annso, i bpus	anall, i leit	anonn.
2. There	annsan } annsóro }	anonn, sall	anall.
3. Above	tuas	suas	anuas.
4. Below	tíos	síos	aníos.
5. North	tuair	ó tuair	adtuair.
6. South	teas	ó teas	anteas.
7. East	toir	soir	anoir.
8. West	tíar	síar	aníar.
9. Inside	istig	isteach	amach.
10. Outside	amuig	amach	isteach.

(b) In addition to these we have :—*lastuair*, on the N. side ; *lasteas*, on the S. side ; *lastoir*, on the E. side ; *lastiar*, on the W. side ; *lastuas*, on the upper side ; *lastíos*, on the lower side ; *lastall*, on the other side ; *lasmuig*, outside ; *lastig*, inside. All these become **compound preps.** by adding *de* :—*lastuair de'n caisleán*, north of the castle ; *lastall de'n Iordán*, on the other side of the Jordan ; *lastig de dá bliain*, within 2 years (temporal) ; *lasmuig de Séana*, with the exception of Séana.

(c) From prep.+noun.—*i tuisce*, in safe keeping ; *i tómas*, in store for ; *ar tosach*, in front ; *cum cinn*, ahead ; *ó céile*, apart.

C.—Temporal Adverbs :—

1° Noun-forms, with or without the article :—*Anois*, now ; *arís*, again ; *inniu*, to-day ; *inoé*, yesterday ; *anocht*, to-night ; *aréir*, last night ; *anuair*, last year.

2° The A. of time :—*amall*, for a while ; *seachtmáin*, for a week.

3° The G. of time :—In *oia luam*, etc., *oia* is a G. of time. K. often has G. of time with *gach* :—*gach maíne*, every morning ; *gach bliana*, every year. These are due to *mí gach bliana*—a month of every year, etc.

4° D. or A. with prepositions :—*ar marom*, in the morning ; *um trátnóna*, in the evening ; *umanoirtear*, the day after to-morrow ; *oe ió is o'oiróce*, by day and night ; *coigtróis(-óeas)* is *lá moiu*, this day fortnight (in the past) ; *coigtróis ó moiu*, this day fortnight (in the future).

5° Prep. pronouns :—*riam*, ever (*lit.* before it) ; *ceana*, already (*lit.* without it). *Coróce*, ever (<co *noróce*) used of the fut. or, in a general way, of all time.

D.—Interrogative Adverbs :—*Cá?* where? whence? whither? *Canad?* where? whither? *Caóim, ca h-uair?* when? *Cionnus, conus?* how? *An fáda?* *Cia an fáro?* how long? *Caó é mar?* *Soiróé mar (U.)?* how? *Caó mar seall ar . . .* what about? *Caó uime (cuise)?* wherefore?

E.—Causal Adverbs :—*Óá bríḡ sin, uime sin*, therefore ; *cuise sin*, for that purpose ; *Óá bárr san, Óá óeasḡaib sin*, in consequence of that (the latter of bad or untoward results).

F.—Negative Adverbs :—*ní, níor* ; *éa, éar (U.)* ; *naé, ná, nár*.

G.—Quantitative Adverbs :—

1° The A. of Extent in Degree (see 175 A 4) :—*Óá sé pas beas fuar*—it is somewhat cold ; *bí sé ar meisge iarractín*—he was just a trifle tipsy ; *maḡtnuigeann sé siúo an iomaó*—he thinks too much.

2° D. or A. with prep.—*ar éigim*, with difficulty ; *so teor*, enough ; *so léir*, entirely.

3° Intensive adv. prefixes are, of course, quantitative: *Sár-, ró-, ríog-* very.

H.—Multiplicative Adverbs :—*fé oó*, twice ; *seact bpearr*, ever so much better ; *leat-óéanta*, half-done.

I.—Asseverating Adverbs :—*So deimim (so dearbḡta)*, really ; *so deimim 7 so dearbḡta ('am briatar 7 'am basa)*, really and truly ; *óar fáó, óarfa liat, óar fáó na feola, óar fáó 7 fiolar*—all strong forms of “assuredly.”

J.—Concessive Adverbs :—'nΔ v̄iΔiṛō sṁ, for all that ;
ΔR Δ sōn sΔn, notwithstanding, etc., etc.

158.—Adverbial Clauses :—

1° Stereotyped :—pé scéat é, at all events ; pé'r v̄omān é, anyway ; v̄á mb'é pém é, even he.

2° pé cuma 'n-Δ v̄puaṛ sé é, however he got it ; pé áit 'nΔ ngeobΔv̄, wherever I go ; v̄á luḡeav̄ tu, ní leanb̄ tu, you may be small, but you're no child.—Such clauses modify the main clause in the various ways set forth in 156.

159.— Notes on the Adverbs.

1° The prep. go (with) forms adverbs only with teor and léir. Otherwise go (=to) is used—go mór—to a great extent.

2° The spellings súas, síos, sóir, síar are erroneous.

3° tēas (instead of v̄eas) because of the frequent conjunction—tūarō 7 tēas.

4° In ó tūarō, ó v̄eas, ó is certainly *not* the prep. ó. It is either the prep. fo, or a form of the copula. O'imtṛṡ sé san áirō fa tūarō (>ó tūarō), he went towards the point that was North.

5° 1stṛṡ, amuṡ, show the D., 1steac̄, amac̄, the A. of teac̄.

6° lasmuṡ, and all the forms in 157 B. (b), except la1stṛṡ, derive their -s- from the latter=la-1stṛṡ (la-being a weak form of leat̄, side).

7° Δrís<O.I. a fhrith-éssi, *his back-track*. Now used of both numbers and genders, and all three persons.

8° 1nṛiu, D. of v̄ia, day, with art.

9° Δnoct̄, D. of noct̄ (L. nox) with art.—*the* night.

10° v̄ia luam, v̄ia m̄áirt, v̄ia céav̄aoim', v̄iarv̄aoim, v̄ia n-Δoime, v̄ia sačairn, v̄ia v̄omnais̄, are adverbs—on Monday, etc. The noun forms are :—Δn luān, Δn m̄áirt, Δn céav̄aoim, Δn v̄arv̄aoim, Δn Δoime, Δn sačarn, Δn v̄omnac̄.

11° leis, also, is sometimes used, in negative sentences, where we might rather expect ac̄ cōm beas̄ (ac̄ Δn oireav̄, U.). Dub̄airt sé ná raib̄ sé ann, 7 ní raib̄,

1e1s—He said he wasn't there, and neither was he. South of Ireland English employs "too" in the same way :—A.—"You don't look well." B.—"I'm not, too." The "raison d'être" of the usage is the fact that such negative sentences are a *re-assertion* of the preceding negative statement.

CHAPTER VII.

CONJUNCTIONS.

160.—The **Conjunction** is the part of speech which is used to connect phrases, clauses, sentences, and co-ordinate words :—**Phrases** :—*bí sé ar meisge, 7 ar dearg-buile*—he was drunk *and* raging mad. **Clauses** :—*bí sé ar buile nuair a dúbairt sé an cáinnit sin*—he was mad *when* he said that. **Sentences** :—*bí a d'á cois briste. Dá b'riḡ sin, ní féadfaid sé siubal*—his two legs were broken, so he couldn't walk. **Words** :—*ṡánadair go léir, roir ós 7 aosta*—They all came, young *and* old.

Conjunctions are either **co-ordinating**, or **subordinating**. The former connect clauses (phrases, words) of equal grammatical rank. The latter connect **dependent** clauses with the main clause.

Co-ordinating Conjunctions :—These are either :—(a) **Cumulative (Copulative)**, which *add* one statement to another. (b) **Adversative** :—which *set one statement against another*. (c).—**Illative (Inferential)**—which *point to a conclusion arrived at*.

(a) Copulative Conjunctions :—

1° *agus*, and (*as, is, 's*. Often *7*,—a contraction of *L.—et*).—*bí an saibhir 's an daibhir i ngráó leis (Eoḡan Cóir)*—Rich and poor were in love with him !

2° *roir agus*—both and.—*bí ceannsa le các, roir caraio 7 eascaraio*—Be gentle with all, both friend and enemy.

(b) Adversative Conjunctions :—

1° *nó*, else (or else).—*ní fuláir nó tá tuirse air*—he must be (a strong man) or else he's tired,

2° **Acc.**, but.—*Ní meisge pé n'oeár é, ac' dearg-
óiomhaoimceas*—Not intoxication caused it, but downright
idleness.

(c) **Illative Conjunctions** :—*'Oá b'riḡ sin*, therefore ;
mar sin, so ; *má's ead'*, so.

161.—Subordinating Conjunctions :—

1° **Modal**—*pé cuma n'a b'puair sé í*—however he got it.

2° **Local**—*mar a raib' an saḡart*—where the priest
was.

3° **Temporal**.—*sul a d'tiocfaid' an 'Domn'ac'*—before
Sunday comes.

4° **Causal**.—*nílir-se cionntac' ann, ó nac' tu a d'eim é*—
you're not responsible, as you didn't do it.

5° **Final**.—(denoting purpose).—*sul a mbeinn d'éirdean-
ac. (S.)*—lest I should be late.

6° **Consecutive** (denoting result).—*tá oiread' san
ceana aḡam air ḡur d'óic' liom ḡo n-íosad' é (S.)*—I'm so
fond of him that I think I'll eat him.

7° **Quantitative**—*is fearr an maic' atá ná an d'á maic'
do b'í*—Present goods are twice as good as past ones.

8° **Concessive** :—*b'íod' ḡo raib' 'f'ios aḡam*—although I
knew.

9° **Conditional** :—The clause containing the condition,
is called the **Protasis**, that containing the conclusion,
the **Apodosis**. *má*, if.—Implies that the condition is,
was, will, or would be verified, or else leaves it an open
question, implying neither non-fulfilment, nor serious
doubt. It can be used :—

With **pres. Indic.**—*má tá sé ann, labrad' sé*—if he's
here, let him speak ; *má f'áḡann tusa mé, is cuma mé
nó na d'ailt (lúc. 48)*—if you leave me, I'm no
better than the blind.

With the **past Indic.**—*má táinig don d'roc-scéal,
níor airigeas-sa é*—if bad news came, I didn't hear it.

With the **Fut.**—*má b'erò sé annso i mbáiread'*—if he
is here to-morrow.

With the **Impft.**—*má b'íod' sé ann*—if he was there
(habitually).

With the **Condit.**—*má bead' sé oiread'innac' duit*—
if it would suit you (as I'm sure it would !).—*'Oá*, if ;—

- (a) Used in mod. I. only with past Subj. (or Condit.).
 (b) The *time* referred to may be past, pres. or fut.
 (c) The condition is either *unreal* (i.e., *not verified* in past or pres., or *not verifiable* in the fut.), or at least *very doubtful* :—

A.—**Actual pres.**—*Óá tacaíod an sagart anois*—if the priest were to come now.

B.—**Habitual pres.**—*Ó'féadófaínn é óéanam don uair óá mba maic liom é*—I could do it any time, if I wanted to.

C.—**Past.**—*Óá tceigead sé ann gac lá anuirid*—If he went there every day last year. (Impft.)—*Óá n-abrad sé* (CMO. 93), if He had said (Plupft.).

D.—**Fut.**—*Óá tacaíod Seán i mbáiread*—If S. were to come to-morrow.

Muna, munar, if not, unless (O.I. *mani*), the neg. of *má* :—

With the Pres. Indic. **actual** :—*Muna bfuil sé annso*—if he is not here. Pres. Indic. **habitual** :—*Muna mbíonn sé féin ann*—if he is not there himself (habitually).

Pres. Hab. in future sense :—*Muna ndéinir ruo orm* (Luc. 14)—If you do not do as I tell you. (Or *deinir* may be pres. subj.).

With **past indic.**—*Muna raib sé ann*—if he wasn't there.

With the **Fut.**—*Muna mberó ciall agat*—If you won't have sense.

With the **Impft.**—*Muna tacaíod sé i n-am*—If he didn't come (habitually) in time.

With the **Condit.**—*Muna mbeaó Seán*—Only for S.

The neg. of *óá* is either *muna* (with Past Subj.) or *óá mba ná* (followed by the Condit.) :—1° *Óá mba ná beaó don cúis eile aicí* (CMO. 25)—If she had had no other reason. 2° *Óá mba ná beaó Óia ag cabrú linn de síor*—If God were not always helping us. But note the difference between “*Óá mba ná*” and “*muna*.” E.g., in ex. 1° it is implied that *she had other reasons*. i.e.—the negative supposition “*ná beaó don cúis eile aicí*” is *unreal*. “*Muna mbeaó*” would leave it an open question. So ex. 2° implying,

as it does, the *unreality* of the supposition “ná beaḁ Ḑia ḁḡ caḁrú linn ḁe síor,” virtually asserts the truth :—Ḑionn Ḑia ḁḡ caḁrú linn ḁe síor.

ḁḥḥ ḡo, provided that, if only (O.I. acht ro, with Subj.)—ḁḥ ná cuirḡí fearḡ uirḥí (S.), provided that she were not “riled.” Distinguish from :—(a) ḁḥḥ ḡo=when, until.—ḁḥḥ ḡo ḁḥámḡ ná h-ḁllmúraḡ—until the foreigners came. (b) ḁḥḥ ḡo, except that—ḁḥḥ ḡo ḁḥámḡ sé síú ḡsteḁḥ—except that that fellow came in.

10° **Demonstrative Conjunctions** :—ḡo, that, *lit.* until that, so that ; with ro>ḡur. This is the ordinary particle for *affirmative* indirect speech.—Ḑeir sé ḡo mberḁ sé annso ḡ mbáireḁḥ—he says that he will be here to-morrow. It also introduces a noun-clause to act as subj. or pred. to “is,” or as appositional subject or object after other verbs :—As **subj.**—Ḑ’féroir ḡo ḁḥiocḡarḁ sé moiu—Maybe he’d come to-day. As **pred.**—’Sé eaḡla bí orm ḡo ḁḥiocḡarḁ—My fear was that he would come. As **object.**—Ḑeimrḁ é fḡḡairḥ ḡo ḡcuirḡar an cime cum báis—Have it announced that the prisoner will be put to death.

The corresponding neg. conjunctions are ná, naḥ, náir :—(a) Ḑeir sé ná ḥiocḡarḁ sé ḁ ḥuille—He says he won’t come any more. (b) Is ḁóic liomsa naḥ saḡarḥ ḡ n-ḁon cor é—I think he’s not a priest at all. (c) Ḑubarr leis náir máit liom ḁul ann—I told him I shouldn’t like to go.

11° Interrogative Conjunctions :—

(a) Ní fearḁar an ḁḥiocḡarḁ sé moiu—I wonder will he come to-day. Here an not only *modifies* the clause—ḥiocḡarḁ sé, but also *connects* the latter with ní fearḁar, thus uniting the functions of adv. and conj. So with the other *interrog.* adverbs (157 D) :—

(b) Is ḁeacair ḁ ráḁ caḥom ḁ ḥiocḡarḁ sé—It is hard to say when he’ll come.

(c) Ní fḡos ḁ’ḁoinne conus ḁ ḁeimeann sé é—No one knows how he does it.

(d) Ní ḥuḡim ḡ n-ḁon cor caḁ cuḡe ḡur ḁeim sé é—I cannot understand why he did it.

CHAPTER VIII.

PREPOSITIONS.

162.—The **Preposition** is the part of speech that serves, with a noun, pronoun, or noun-equivalent to make up a qualifying phrase, either substantival, adjectival or adverbial (Syntax 303). Preps. are either simple or compound. A.—**Simple Prepositions** :—

1° Governing D.—*to*, to, for ; *oe*, from, off, of, etc. ; *ó*, from ; *Δ*, *Δs*, out of ; *Δs*, at, etc. (with prons. sometimes *partitive*—*curo ΔsΔinn*, some of us) ; *ós*, above ; *so*, with (nearly obsolete) ; *roim*, before (O.I. *re*).

2° Governing the A. only (orig.) :—*te*, with, etc. ; *tre*, through ; *so*, to ; *um*, about, etc. ; *roir*, between (with D. in pl., *roir fearaib 7 mnáib*—both men and women) ; *amát*, as (now only with 3 sg. neut. suffixed pron.—*amtaró*, like this) ; *san*, without ; *seac*, past ; *tar*, over, beyond (and, in asseverations, *oár*).

3° Governing (orig.) D. or A.—*in*,—in (*rest*, D), into (*motion* A) ; *ar*, for, because of (now often “on”) ; *fé* (*fó*, *fá*, *faoi*), under, towards, etc. ; *for*, on (now only used in compounds, like *formao*, *fortámas*, etc.).

In addition to the above, other simple preps. are found only in compounds (nouns, verbs, adjectives) :—

(a) *ad*, to, L. *ad*.—*atá* (L. *ad-stat*), *áram*, to count < *ao-ríom*.

(b) O.I. *cen* (= *san*) in *ceann-tar*, the district *on this side* (orig.).

(c) *eactar*, outside of—*eactrann*, *eactrannaic*, foreigner.

(d) *fíao*, in presence of—*fíao-naise*—evidence.

(e) *frít*, *frí*, against—*freagra* (< *frith-gaire*), *frít-bualao*, repercussion.

(f) *iar*, after—*fíafriú*, enquire.

(g) *is*, under, and *ós* above—*iseat*, low, *uasat*, high, *tíos*, *tuas*, etc. (*ós* also forms compd. preps.).

(h) ro (*L. pro*) with adjectives=too,—ró-máic̃.

(i) co, com=with,—cuibread̃, bond, etc., congnam̃, help (<gníom̃), etc.

Many *noun*-forms are used as preps. (with G.) :—

(a) cum, to <to + c̃eim> toic̃im, dochum, cum.

(b) oáit̃a, concerning—oáit̃a an scéil, “by the way.”

(c) toisc, because of (earlier oe toisc)—toisc a n-ingine, because of her daughter.

(d) t̃imceall, around, about, t̃imceall na h-áite—around the place.

(e) fan, along, during—fan an fálla, along the wall ; fan na h-aimsire, all the time (<ar fear̃ na).

(f) cois—beside—cois na t̃ime, na fear̃rge—beside the fire, by the sea.

(g) treasna, across—treasna na h-abann—across the river.

B.—Compound Prepositions :—I.—Simple prep.+noun (with G.). II.—Simple prep.+noun+simple prep. (with D. A. or G. according to circumstances).

I.—Simple prep.+noun :—

(a) m-áice, near—m-áice na t̃ime, near the fire. So—m-aḡar̃, against ; i ḡcíonn, after ; i ḡcaiteam̃, during ; i ḡcúrsaí, concerning ; i n-ionao, instead of, and many others.

((b) ar aḡar̃, in front of—ar aḡar̃ an dorais isteaḡ—opposite the door (viewed from the *outside*). So—ar cút—behind ; ar son, for the sake of ; ar fear̃—for the space of (*time*) ; ar furo, ar fuaro, throughout (*space*), and many others.

(c) o'ionnsur̃oe, towards, against—o'ionnsur̃oe na Traoi—against Troy ; oo réir, according to—oá réir sin—according to that.

(d) oe bárr—as a result of—oá bárr san—as a result of that ; o'á bíctinn sin—because of that ; o'á éis sin—after that.

(e) as uct—for the sake of ; as uct oo ceannsaḡta—for the sake of your mildness.

(f) pé oém, towards, for ; pé bun—under, less than.

(g) *le h-aḡairò*, for, with a view to—*le h-a. an tSamhradò*—in preparation for Summer ; *le h-aís, le coís*—beside ; *le h-eaḡla na heaḡla*—“ to make assurance doubly sure.”

(h) *ós cionn*, over—*ós a cionn*, over it, more ; *ós mo cómair amac*—in front of me ; *ós comne a n-éadán*—before their faces.

(i) *tréis* (<*tar éis*), after—*tréis an tsaogail*—after all ; *tar ceann do sláinte*—for your health's sake.

II.—Simple prep.+noun+simple prep :—

(a) *1 n-aice le*, near—*surò annso 1 n-aice liom*—sit here near me ; *1 scomórtas le, 1 scomméas le*—compared with ; *1 ngeall le*—in pledge for.

(b) *1 bponn cum*—in humour for (with G.) ; *1 bfeirs cum*—angry with.

(c) *mar ḡeall ar*—because of ; *mar bárr ar*—to cap.

(d) *1 nḡar do*—near ; *1 nḡiorraót do*—near.

(e) *laistiar de*, behind ; *lastoir de*—East of.

(f) *1 bḡao ó*—far from.

CHAPTER IX.

INTERJECTIONS.

163.—The **Interjection** is the part of speech used to express some sudden emotion, or to give some direction :

(a) *Amen*, so be it ! *Διιιιιι*, *Phew* ! *Διρρρρ* *muise*, *Well*, *well* ! *Δμ βασα*, *i mbaiste*—*Indeed* ! *Θαρ ριαρρ*, *Θαρρα ιιαρρ*, *Egad* ! (Minced forms of “*By God* !”). *Δσδομ*, *Indeed* ! (< *is* *δοιρ* + *init. n* of following word). *muise*, *Well* ! (from *muire*). *ρεαρρ*, *Lo* ! *Look here* ! (even when addressing more than one). *Mo βρρρρ*, *mo λεαρρ*, *mo λεαρρ γεαρρ*, *mo ρρεαρρ γ mo ραρρ*, *ροιριρρ*, *Alas* ! *Ειστ*, *Hush* ! *υρρ*, *υρρρρ*, *υρρρρ αρρρ*, *mo τρυαρρ*, *Alas* ! *Mo τρυαρρ ρραρρρρρ*, *Δ muire is τρυαρρ*, *Alas and alack* ! *Δρ αγραρρ ιιρρ*, *On* ! *ιστεαρρ τεαρρ*, *In you go* !

(b) Sometimes a noun with the article is used, out of construction, with the force of an interjection :—*Is αμλαρρ Δ βι σε γεαρρ ρεαρρρρρ ρο μαρρρεαρρρρρ σε ρο ρεο*, *αν τ-αμαρρρρρρ* ! (luc. 45)—*The fact was*, he imagined he'd live for ever, the fool !

(c) Many *clauses* given in Grammars as Interjections can hardly be regarded as such. *E.g.*—*ρο ρτεριρρρρρ τυ σλρρ Δ βαρρρ*—*Safe home* ; *σλρρ ρεο αγραρρ*—*Good-bye* ; *Ειστ ρο βεαρρ*—*Silence* ! *ρο mbeannuigrρρ ρια ρυιρρ*—*God save you*, *Good morning*, etc. *ρο mbuanuigrρρ ρια τυ*—*May God give you long life* ; *thank you* !

PART III.

CHAPTER I.

SYNTAX OF THE ARTICLE.

164.—(a) The art. always precedes its noun, and *usually* agrees with it in gender and number; *always* in case :—*an* τ-υβαιι—the apple (M. sg. N. or A. or absolute) ; *an* βεαν—the woman (F. sg. N.A. or abs.) ; *na* η-υβια (M. pl. N.A. or abs.) ; *na* μνά—the women (F. pl. N.A. or abs.).

(b) The M. sg. *an* τ- is used in N.A. before *don*, *don*-*má*o, *o*úτmáo, even if the noun is F.—*An* τ-*don* áιτ *amám* *sa* *o*omán (CMO. 72)—the one spot in the world ; *An* τ-*don* βεαν *amám*—the only woman ; *an* τ-*o*úτmáo βιιαιη—the 8th year. In G. *an* (M.) and *na* η- (F.) are used :—*ma*íoβεαν *an* *o*úτmáo *lae* (CMO. 302)—the morning of the 8th day ; *mac* *na* η-*don*máo *mná* *o*éας—the 11th woman's son.

(c) The sg. art. is used with pl. noun, if the latter is felt as a unity :—*τ*áςáιo *don* *lá* *is* *ma*íτ *li*o *o*e'n *sé* *lá* *san* (CMO. 330)—Come any day of the six that you like ; *an* *na*oι *ς*ciηη *o*éας *γ* *ce*íτre *fi*úιo (CMO. 340)—The ninety-nine.

(d) When a noun, not followed by a demonstrative adj., governs a definite noun in the G., the whole expression is usually definite, but the art. is not used with the 1st noun :—*o*á *mb'*é *le*áτ *mo* *ri*geαúτá *é* (B.N. 624)—Were it even the half of my Kingdom. *o*óτar *na* *μ*ias—the Road of the Dishes. But when this is *nominal*, not *real*, it is indefinite. *o*eιr *sé* *ς*ur *o*óτar *na* *μ*ias *á* *τ*uςar *á*ιη—He says it is called “The Road of the

Dishes." But—*is é bótar na mias do gabhadar an lá san*—It was "the Road of the Dishes" they took that day.

(e) If a demonstrative follows the 1st noun, the art. is used :—*An mac so mo deirbhéar* (TBC. 129)—This sister's son of mine ; *ameasg na gcnoc san Samaria* (CMO. 296)—amid those hills of S.

(f) N.B.—*Ingean tairg*—T.'s daughter (implies that he has only one) ; *ingeon do t.*—a daughter of T. (he having at least one other).

(g) Even when the meaning is *real*, the 1st noun may be indefinite. Thus Canon O'Leary wrote—*Dá mba leat mo rígeadta é* (C.S.)—were it *a* half of my Kingdom (Cf. d. where it is definite). If the *particular half* were specified, we should say—*an leat so dem' rígeadct.* So *taob an bótar*, may refer to either side. But—*do druir sé cum an taob eile de'n bótar* (CMO. 317)—He moved to the other side of the road.

(h) When both nouns are indefinite, the art. is not used :—*Ceann capall*—a horse's (not a cow's, or dog's) head ; *ceann cat*—a cat's head ; *ceann circe*—a hen's head ; *clóc reata*—a rolling stone.

(i) The 1st noun may be definite, the 2nd indefinite :—*An ceann capall sin*—that *horse's head* : But—*ceann an capall sin*—that *horse's head*. In the first ex. *capall* has the force of an adj. *Is cuma nó an clóc reata é*—He's as bad as a rolling stone.

(j) The exx. in (h) and (i) show the G. of *possession* or *quality*. It may also denote the *material*, or *contents* of what is denoted by the 1st noun ; or it may express a *whole* of which the governing noun denotes a *part*. (The Partitive G.). Thus :—1° Both nouns **indefinite** :—**Material** :—*áran mine coirce*—oatmeal bread. **Contents** : *glome fíona*—a glass of wine. **Partitive** :—*braon uisge*—a drop of water. 2° 1st n. definite, 2nd indefinite :—**Material** :—*an t-áran mine coirce seo*—this oatmeal bread. **Contents** :—*an glome fíona*—the glass of wine. **Partitive** :—*an braon uisge*—the drop of water.

(k) Both nouns definite, but *never in partitive meaning* : **Material** :—*meabóg na mme*—the meal-bag. **Contents** :—

glóme an fionn—the wine-glass (though it be empty).
Partitive :—Ordinarily partitive *de* (with D.) is substituted for G.—*mo cion de'n oigreachta* (CMO. 325)—my share of the inheritance ; *cuid de sna h-uaisliú*—some of the nobles : *cuid na h-uasal*=the nobles' property (where the G. is **possessive**, not **partitive**).

(l) *leat mo rígeachta* seems to be against this rule. But, when the 1st noun is made clearly definite, and *the particular half is specified*, the G. construction is dropped, and partitive *de* (with D.) substituted :—*An leat tuaró dem' rígeacht*—the northern half of my Kingdom. In 164 (d) *the half* is contrasted, not with *the other half*, but with *the whole*.

(m) *Tosaí, deireadh, lár, bruach, cois*, and such words, may also be followed by a definite G., though the meaning seems to be partitive :—*Tosaí an Earraí*—the beginning of Spring. *Deireadh an tsamhraid*—the end of Summer. *Lár an fómhair*—the middle of Autumn. *Bruach na h-abhann*—the river's edge. *Cois na fearrúise*—the sea-side.

(n) The following exx. from U.I. violate the rule laid down in (d) above :—

1° *Iarraim-sa, mar atcuinge ort, cár cothaíl tusa aréir, a shúir,*

In-Éirinn nó i dtalamh na bflaitheas míc Dé na n-úil (C.C.U. 100)—

I ask, and beg you answer, where slept you, sister, yesternight,

In I., or in the land of the Kingdom of the Son of God of the elements.

2° *'Sí an t-Samail a' réalta eolais críocha fórla mur tóire* (C.C.U. 130)—

Sawell (a mountain) is the guiding-star of the territory of F., your land.

3° *'S dá scríobfóir mo sgéal ba liom féin an Condae Muig Eo* (C.C.U. 83)—

And if my tale were credited, the Co. of M. were mine.

These exx. may be looked upon as **archaic**.

(o) *An tsaothlan cáille an taoibh slíim* (Haic. 9)—The stately maiden of the slender body (This is *early modern*).

(p) When the def. G. is virtually an adj., the 1st noun may have the article :—Cao é an uair a' cluig é ? —What time is it ? An Coróinn Múire—the Rosary.

(q) The art. is *usually omitted* :—1° In Type II. Ident. vb. is :—Sé cúis ná h-éistean siúse le briatraithe Dé—This is *the* reason why ye listen not to God's words. 2° In Type I. with predicates like the following :—Sé ruo é is éasamlaiqe dár airigeas fós—It's *the* strangest thing I've ever heard. 3° Also in Type VII.—Sin é scéal 's fearr a táinig cúgamn fós (TBC. 122-3)—That's the best news we've had yet. 4° After proper names, before name of a trade, profession, occupation ; and sometimes before a proper name when followed by a demonstrative :—Amorías Mac Craic, file—The poet, A. McC. Taois gada—T. the smith. is iongantac an bean méib seo—This M. is a wonderful woman.

165.—The def. article in I. where E. either has none at all, or else the indef. art :—

1° Before noun and demonstrative :—An fear so, an bean san, na neite úo (But see last ex. above).

2° In interrog. sentences like—Cao é an ruo é sin ? —What is that ? But *not* with cia'cu, when cia is an adj.—Cia'cu ceann ab' fearr leat—Which one would you prefer ? So the art. is absent in—Cé méro, how much ? Ca h-aic, where, whither, whence ? Ca h-uair, when ? and wherever the interrog. forms a compound with the noun, e.g., conus, canao.

3° Before uile, every, when not preceded by gac—an uile caitair—every city (an caitair uile=the whole city).

4° In Type III, Classification sentences, where E. has the indef. art.—Is deas an buacail tu—You're a nice boy !

5° Before titles (exc. in V. of course)—an t-aitair peadar Ó Laoigaire—Fr. P. O'L.

6° In certain expressions of time :—moe, yesterday ; nuair, when ; anois, now ; i mbliadna, this year ; anuirio, last year ; an trát, an tan=when. In moiu, i mbáiread, umanoirtear—to-day, to-morrow, the day after to-morrow, E. has the art. as well.

7° In the names of the days of the week, when *nouns*, and not followed by a def. G.—An luan, Monday. But Dia luan, on M.

8° In—An t-Earrac, an Samrad, an fósma, an Seimread—Spring, Summer, Autumn, Winter. Except when used as adjectives (in G.)—lá samrad, oíche seimríd—a summer day, a winter night.

9° In—An Eanáir, an Feabhra, an Márta, an t-Aibreán, an Bealtaine, an Meitheam, an t-Iúl, mí na Samna, mí na Noílas—Jan., Feb., March, Apr., May, June, July, Nov., Dec. But not when they are used adjectivally—lá Márta, a March day (meaning is *indefinite*), Oíche Samna—Halloweve.

10° In distributive phrases like :—Seobair sib pinginn an tóime—You shall receive each a penny ; coróinn an ceann—5s. apiece.

11° In nouns used as *abstracts*, or in a *general* sense :—An fíoróne, patience ; ainm an airgid, a reputation for riches ; an tóime, man (in general).

12° In names of virtues and vices, in a general sense :—an tóruis, unchastity ; an t-ólaán, intemperance (in drink).

13° With *concrete* words, used to denote a class :—Bí an saibhir 's an daibhir i ngrád leis—Rich and poor were in love with him.

14° With certain surnames, when the Christian name is absent :—an Briana, Mr. O'Brien ; an Breathna, Mr. Walsh.

15° With names of certain countries, cities, rivers, etc.—An Róm, Rome ; an Eibéis, Switzerland ; an Aifric, Africa ; an Fhrainc, France ; an Spáinn, Spain ; an tSorca, Sweden ; an Iorua, Norway ; Éire, Ireland ; G. usually na h-Éireann, but also Éireann :—fíor Éireann, the men of I. So, with Alba ; an Neroín, Kenmare ; na Gleannatái, Glenties ; an Suagán, Gougane Barra ; an Gaillim, Galway ; an Donac (D), Nenagh ; an Feoir, the river Nore, etc., etc.

16° With the names of things *unique* (sometimes) :—an t-Aifreann naomta, Holy Mass ; but Aifreann Dé, in accordance with 164 (d) ; na flaitis, Heaven : but flaitis Dé ; an Caras, an Cáisc, an Cingcís, an Inro,

an noṽlaṽ—Lent, Easter, Pentecost, Shrovetide, Xmas. But often without art.—lá noṽlaṽ, Xmas Day, Oṛóce noṽlaṽ, Xmas Eve ; Oṛóce lae noṽlaṽ, Xmas Night, etc., etc.

17° Instead of a G. pers. pron., a D. pron. is sometimes used, and the article is used with the noun :—Conus τᾱ an τslámte ḁṽat ? How is your health ? 'Oo ṽrṽs ḁṽ an ṽpṛṛṛne ḁṽam—My patience became exhausted ; 'oo ṽeḁrr sí an cṛṛṛe ḁcu (CMO. 299)—it lacerated their hearts.

18° In expressing large numbers or quantities :—na céḁṛṛa, hundreds ; na τámte, crowds ; na mílte, thousands ; na cṽanta, ages ; an ṽṛmaṛṛ, an ṽṛmarca, too much, too many.

19° With names of languages (sometimes) :—an ṽḁeṛṛṽ, an ṽéarṽa, an ṽarṛm, an ṽréṽṽs—I., E., L., Gk.

166.—Vivid use of art.—To express certain emotions such as surprise, joy, pathos, fright, etc. :—1° Cḁṛ 'oo cṽṽnn os mo cṛṛmaṽr ḁmaṛ ḁc an ṽallán !—There I saw in front of me—a pillar-stone ! (fear, excitement). 2° τᾱ an lá ḁṽamn !—We are victors ! (joy). 3° τᾱṛṛ na τámte ḁṽ ṽḁṽáṽ ṽáṽs ṽe'n ocraṽ—Thousands are dying of hunger (pathos).

Here we may place the exclamatory or interjectional use of art. and noun ; and a certain use of the art. before ordinal numerals :—1° an τ-ḁmaṛṛán ! ṽ ḁ céḁṛṛṛṛṛṛ ḁ ṽeṽcéṛṛ !—Fool that he was, to think I should do such a thing ! 2° 'Oeṽr an τríṛmaṛṛ ṽṛme ṽṛṽ ḁmṽarṛ ḁ ṽṽaras ḁṽṽeḁṛ ḁṽ ṽṽl ḁmṽṛḁ—A third fellow suggests that I found lost money !

CHAPTER II.

SYNTAX OF THE NOUN.

167.—The n. is that part of speech whereby any object or property existing in, or presented to, the mind is expressed by itself alone :—*féar*, *bean*, *meisce*, *macán-táct*—man, woman, intoxication, honesty.

Use of the cases :—**The Nominative** :—The cases are the forms which nouns assume to express their relations to other words in the sentence. The N. denotes :—

(a) **The Subject** :—*‘Do buail Seán é*—S. struck him ; *‘do deimead brúscar de*—it was crumbled (Passive).

(b) **The Predicate** :—*is sagart é sin*—that is a priest ; *is í céad ceist ‘do cuiread air, ná céir’ ‘óib é*—the first question put to him was who was he. (Here the pred. n. is *complex*—the clause—*céir’ ‘óib é*).

(c) **The Projected N.**—Used at the beginning, when the speaker has not quite formed the sentence in his mind ; or when, for rhetorical or other reason, it is deliberately put first. *E.g.*, *Dominus in caelo sedes ejus* (Ps. x. 5)—The Lord’s throne is in heaven. When thus projected, the N. form is often *absolute*.

(d) **The Virtual N.**

168.—**The Projected N.**—1° *An té a tíocharó cúgamsa ní beró ocras air* (CMO. 261)—He who comes to Me shall not hunger (*an té*, absolute). 2° *An té a ‘ó’ iteann mise beró sé beo ‘dem’ bárr-sa* (CMO. 262)—He that eateth Me shall live by Me (*an té*, N.). 3° *An té ná beró ciall aise, beró cuimne aise* (Des.)—He who will not have “reason” shall have “reason to remember” (*an té*, absolute). 4° *An ruo nac bfuil itte nó gorote, geobtar é*—What is not eaten or stolen will be found (UP.—*an ruo*, N., if *geobtar* is taken as Pass.).

169.—**The Virtual N.**—1° *‘bí eagla air ‘out léi* (CMO. 253)—He was afraid to go with her. *‘Out* is here **virtual**

N., i.e., it is N. because of two other constructions, conveying the same meaning, in which *out* is **actually** N. :—(a) *b'eaḡat leis out léi*. (b) *Ċuir sé eaḡla air out léi*. This is always the case where *effect* and *cause* are simply juxtaposed, without one saying in so many words, that the one *is* the cause of the other. 2° *Ĭi ionḡna orċa a ráð nár fēaḡaḡar é faḡáil lastoir* (CMO. 259)—They were surprised to think they could not find Him East. (ráð, virtual N.). 3° *Ĭi leisḡe orm teaċt lem' ḡnó beaḡ fēim aḡ cur isteaċ ort* (TBC. 134)—I was loth to come and disturb you with my own little worry. (teaċt, virtual N.).

170.—Apposition :—

A.—**Grammatical** :—1° *b'sin é aċair ċomáis uí nualláin*—That was T. O'N.'s father. 2° *a šeáin uí séaḡḡa*—S. O'Shea (V.). 3° Common in O.I. after proleptic *a* :—*a masse in chuirp*—the beauty of the body. 4° *fa' clann do šarōb mḡm ċuinn an triúr* (FF. Bk. 1, 272)—The three were children of S. Conn's daughter. In these exx. *ċomáis uí* ; *šeáin uí* ; *a* in *chuirp* ; *šarōb mḡm*, are in **grammatical** apposition.

B.—**Logical** (only) :—1° *Ĭi a fīos aḡam é* (lúc. 41)—I knew it well. 2° *īomáig pōil apstai* (E.S. 26)—The image of the Apostle Paul. 3° When a noun preceded by a title is used, the title only is inflected :—(a) *a aċair peaḡar*—Fr. P. (Voc.). *peaḡar* is **absolute**. (b) *leabaḡair an aċar peaḡar ó laogaire*—Fr. P. O'Leary's books. [*aċar*, G. ; *peaḡar*, **abs.**, and *ó* (in *grammat. appos.*) **abs. also**]. (c) So, when the title *follows* the name, the *title* is not inflected :—*aḡus ainm Ĭictória ċamríogam šasana faoi* (Smb. 130)—With V. the Q. of E's name under it. (*ċamríogam abs.*).

C.—**Apposition to a sentence** :—1° *Ĭi átas air, níð nárō ionḡna*—Naturally, he was glad. Here "*níð nárō ionḡna*" is in *appos.* to "*Ĭi átas air*," and *níð* is best explained as **virtual N.** 2° *Ruð is measa ná san fēim, is contaḡrċaċ an ara iad* (TBC. 19)—Worse still, they're a dangerous lot ! *Ruð*, **virtual N.**

D.—**Partitive Apposition** :—A *part* is placed loosely in *apposition to the whole* :—1° *Ĭemro siað, an ċuro is*

mó acu, ar an gcuma san é—They do it like that—the most of them. The apposition is **corrective**, toning down a too general statement. Curo, **virtual N.** 2° Do daoraó an cúro eile, gac re roume acu, cum báis—The others were condemned to death—every second man of them.

E.—Prepositional Apposition:—1° C1a'cu 'oe'n 'oá ceann is fearr leat?—Which of the two do you prefer? Acu is proleptic, 'oe'n 'oá ceann being its term, and this is **prepositional** apposition. C1a 'oe'n 'oá ceann would suffice **logically**, but c1a'cu . . . is usual. 2° C1a'cu aḡamn-ne, c1a'cu aḡaib-se, and even c1a'cu acu san—Which of us, you, them?

171.—Absolute Construction:—The **N. forms** of nouns and pronouns are often *not N. in function*. This occurs when, logically, the meaning involved is that of G. D. A. or V., and usage allows none of them:—

1° In the “Bracketed Construction” (179) where the first noun (or pronoun) resists inflection, **the phrase being taken as a unit**; or, if the phrase is a noun-adj. one, the adj. at any rate resists inflection:—(a) Toisc (an saibbreas go léir a beic aige) (G. 4)—Because he was so wealthy; an saibbreas, **abs. the phrase G.**

(b) Ar fear (ramnt beas aimsire) (bn. 710)—For some little time.—ramnt beas, **abs.—the phrase (a complex n.) G.** (c) 7 ceas (tarang as) (S. 20)—with permission to withdraw the money.—tarang, **abs.—the phrase, G.** (d) 1 gcaiteam (oireas 7 don lá amám) (Im. 118)—For even a single day. oireas, **abs.—phrase, G.** (e) Dubairt sé le (gac bean oib) (br. 21)—He told each of the women. (f) Tá tosac aḡat orca go léir ac ar (Site beas) (S. 18)—You're before them all, except little S. (g) timpal (an trímáó n-uair), (CS. 55)—About the third hour. (h) a (solas an tsolais síorurde) (Im. 271)—Thou light of everlasting light.

2° Cum (to) and tréis (after) do not inflect a vb. n. preceded by proleptic a:—(a) Tréis a ráó go dtiocfa (TBC. 188)—having said that you would come. (b) Tánas annso cum a iarrat ar Óia . . . (S. 42)—I came here to ask God. . . . (c) In the same circumstances do' iarrat

leaves the vb. n. uninflected :—*ná bí ad' iarraio á cur 'na luige orm gur tu an saḡart*—Don't try to convince me that you are the priest.

3° The term of proleptic *á, ve, acu, etc.*, is abs., except in the case of prep. appos., and the cases mentioned in 216 :—(a) *ṭá á fíos ḡam é.*—*é* abs. (b) *fás fúmsa á tuisḡint cao é an saḡas aristotelés* (Lúc. 36)—Leave it to me to judge what sort A. was. (c) *ní fearrve tu é*—You're nothing the better of it.—*é* abs. (d) *Cia'cu an cátaoir nó an mím nó an t-uball ba veas?* (S. 6)—Was it the chair, or the meal, or the apple that was nice? *cátaoir, mím, uball*, abs.

4° Wherever there is **logical** without grammatical apposition :—See 170, B.—There is a word used absolutely in every one of the exx. given there. Thus :—In 1° *é* ; in 2° *apstat* ; in 3° *peavár*, etc.

5° The Projected N. forms given in 168 are often not N. syntactically, and must then be taken as abs.—This is the case in exx. 1° and 3°.

6° After “*is fíú*”=is worth :—*Óir is fíú an fear oibre é cotú* (CMO. 246)—For the labourer is worthy of his food.—*é*, abs.

7° *An té* is abs. in sentences like the following :—*ba mór an t-uatbás é, an té á cípeao é*—It was a very dreadful sight, had one seen it.

172.—Sense Construction :—1° *Cao é an bac atá oraimn mteact láitread?* (Lúc. 42)—What is there to prevent us from going away at once? *Cao é an bac atá oraimn*=*nac ceavuiḡte dúmn*, or *ná fuil sé ceavuiḡte ḡamn*, either of which would be followed by the N. *mteact* (this being, therefore, in the orig. sentence **virtual N.**). Or one might render the sense by—*cao á comeáopao sinn ḡan. . . ?*—In which case the orig. *mteact* would be virtual A. 2° Exx. like—*veao eagla orm out istead*, can be justified on the same principle of “**Sense Construction.**” 3° *Oob' uasal an tseisear iao* (ṭBC. 2)—They were a noble Six (Meadhbh is here referring to herself and her five sisters. *Seisear* (M.) is therefore treated as F.). 4° *á roḡa bean*=*don vean ba roḡa leis*—any woman he chose.

173.—The Genitive :—

A.—The Possessive G. (with various shades of meaning)

1° Possession or ownership :—(a) *Trí pícead, cúig véas*—23, 15 (lit. 20's 3 ; 10's 5). (b) *leabhar Seáin*—S.'s book (He owns, or possesses it). 2° Made by :—*Amráin 7 Dánta an Céitinnis*—Keating's Poems. 3° Representing :—*Íomáig póil Apstail (K.)*—a statue of the A.P. 4° Commemorating :—*Sráro Uí Conaill*—O'Connell St. 5° Remarkable for :—*Coill na lon*—The Wood of the Blackbirds (in Tyrone). 6° Partitive :—*Searr-cúro airgíro*—a tidy sum of money.

N.B.—The partitive G. is *not* used :—(a) With pronouns. Partitive *as*, or *de* (with D.) are used instead :—*an cúro díob*—those of them ; *cia'cu acu?*—which of them ? Except in—*a bfuirmór, a leath, a trían*—the most of them, the half of it (them), the third of it—and similar phrases. (b) With Compar. and Superl.—*Sé tás is fearr de'n beirt*—T. is the better of the two ; *an té is fearr ortha go léir*—the best of them all. (c) With numerals :—*An dara dume de'n dream*—The 2nd one of the lot ; *an pícead cúro de*—the 20th part of it. (d) With the Numeral Substantives, unless the G. is indefinite :—Thus we say :—*beirt fear, seisear ban*—two men, six women. (These are, perhaps, not partitive, but appositional or explanatory). But—*beirt de sna fearaib, seisear de sna mnáib*—Two of the men, six of the women. (e) Outside the classes of exx. in—a definite partitive G. is not permissible. Hence :—1° *sluaḡ de daoimib bocta na cathaice (CMO. 57)*—Crowds of the city poor. 2° *a lán de dántaib an file sin*—many of that poet's "dánta."

B.—The G. of Quality :—Denotes some quality or characteristic of what is denoted by the governing noun :—1° *Ba mise croíde na péile acu, oróice 7 lá* (Song)—I was "the heart of hospitality" with them day and night. 2° *mná fuasála*—seamstresses. 3° *scian coise dubhe (S.)*—a black-handled knife. 4° *oróice seaca*—a frosty night.

C.—The Subjective (Active) G.—(a) The subjective G. is, properly speaking, that which denotes the agent of

the action implied by the governing word :—1° *ḡráð* *Ṯé*—the love of God (which God has for us). 2° *is beas é sum na nṮaoime sin sa nḡaoluinn*—Those people take but little interest in I. (b) Although the G. in (a) is active, since it represents the **agent**, the name **Active G.** is sometimes given to the G. of the vb. n. itself used actively :—1° *CearṮ Ṯéanta crocán ḡcriað* (K.)—An artificer of earthen pots. 2° *Caílín Ṯeas crúróte na mbó*—the pretty milk-maid.

D.—The **Objective (Passive) G.**—Denotes the **object** of the action implied by the governing word, and is therefore also called **passive** :—1° *Ar ḡráð Ṯé*—For the love of God (i.e., which *we feel* for God). 2° *An amhlaidṮ ba mait leat Ṯo Ṯí-ceannaṮ anoct?*—Can you possibly wish to be beheaded to-night?

E.—The **Appositional G.**—Sometimes used instead of a n. in apposition. Cf. L. *urbs Roma*, I.—*CaṮair na Róma*—the city of Rome.

F.—The **Explanatory G.**—Akin to E.—1° *Rinnceoir mná*—a female dancer. 2° *Ṯubáilce na Ṯrúise*—the vice of impurity.

G.—The **G. of Time** :—1° *ḡaṮa bliaðna, ḡaṮa míosa, ḡaṮa marone*—Every year, month, morning. Common in K. Orig. partitive, arising out of such phrases as, *lá ḡaṮa bliaðna*. 2° In *Ṯia Ṯomnaig*, etc., we have an old G. of time, from the noun *Ṯia*, *die*=day.

H.—The **G. of Purpose** :—An extension of the **terminal** meaning of the G. after *cum* :—1° *Ḳum bláṮ CliaṮ is eaṮ Ṯo cuṮar*—It was to D. they went. 2° *Ḳum na nṮaoime Ṯo ḡaoraṮ is eaṮ Ṯo Ṯánaḡ*—I have come to save the people. Cf. the early use of E. *for*, and Fr. *pour* before infinitives :—I have come *for* to save the people. *Je suis venu pour sauver le peuple*.

I. G. of **Cause or Origin**.—*uaigneas Ṯo mná* (Ṯ.SA 13)—loneliness (arising from loss) of your wife; *uṮ circe*—a hen-egg; *sicíní cearc*—chickens; *buite feirge*—raging frenzy.

J.—G. of **Material**.—*caṮaoir súḡám*—a “soogawn” chair; *carṅ cloc*—a heap of stones; *bóro aṮmaro*—a wooden table; *roṮ iaramn*—an iron wheel; *ponnsa práis*—a brazen fillet; *mála mme*—a bag of meal;

sac plúir—a sack of flour. The last two exx. are G. of Material Contained—the contents.

The G. is not used after participles, or other adjectives, except when the latter are used as nouns :—*Bíodó truaḡ aḡat do boctaiḃ Dé*—Have pity for God's poor.

174.—The Dative :—The D. does duty also for the Ablative, Instrumental and Locative cases :—D.—*Tabair déirc d'í*—Give her an alms. Abl.—*í b'fao ó baile*—far from home. Instr.—*le buille (de) cláróeam*—with a sword-thrust. Loc.—*sa baile*—at home : *sa Róm*—in Rome.

The D. is used :—1° Without a prep.—*marom*—in the morning (also *ar marom*) ; *feasda*, henceforward (O.I. *ind fecht sa*=now) ; *inniu*, to-day ; *anoct*, to-night (O.I. *in-nocht*=the night) ; *an f'ao*, whilst ; *nuaig*, *trát*, when. These are all D. of time. *fé* (in *fé mar*) is a modal D.

2° With certain preps. (as set forth in 162). For the case of pronouns after preps., see 116.

The D. expresses :—(a) Possession :—*ta leabhar aḡ Seán*—S. has a book. (The G. may denote either possession or ownership). (b) Ownership (with *le*, and A. of pronouns).—*lám liom*, a hand of mine ; *is le Seán é*, it is Sean's ; *ní f'eadair cos léi cao a déanfao lám léi* (S.)—Not “a foot of her” knows what “a hand of her” will do. (c) The subjective view, with *is* and *le* ; the objective fact with *is* and *do* :—*is maic liom tae ac ní maic dom é*—I like tea but it isn't good for me ; *ní féoir liom*,—I don't think it possible ; *ní féoir dom*,—It is not possible for me. (d) Advantage and disadvantage :—*Dein ruo ar do mácair*—obey your mother ; *is salaac a déinis le Seán é*—you treated S. scurvily. (e) The indirect object—*Tabair do Liam é*—give it to William ; *ar n-arán laetearmail tabair dúinn inniu*—Give us this day our daily bread. (f) The agent (with *do*)—*ar mbeic aḡ triall i n-éirinn do Com gCulainn* (f.f.)—When C.C. was proceeding to I. (eclipsis after Com is irregular) ; *ní gearánta do lit*—L. needn't complain. (g) Local relation :—*í gCorcaig atá sé anois*—He's in Cork now ; *bí sé ar an donac inné*—he

was at the fair yesterday ; *is ó Corcaig dom*—I'm from Cork. (h) Various relations, after verbs, before and after nouns, and after adjectives and participles (see 305-6). (i) Mode, condition, instrument :—*le congnam Dé*, with God's help ; *ar meisce*, intoxicated ; *o'don gnó*—on purpose ; *ar gealaig* (bn. 617), like a lunatic ; *ar luas* (bn. 639), speedily. (j) Reason, purpose :—*ar an adubar san*—for that reason ; *ar a usáct a bí sé*—considering how easy it was. (k) Measurement :—*oá fáro an lá is ead is giorra an oíche*—the longer the day the shorter the night.

“*Oo cómaiseas mo pic is mo pota 's mo cárt
le pic is le pota 's le cárt mná an margaid—
ba mó iad mo pic is mo pota de cárt
ná pic agus pota 'sus cárt mná an margaid.*”
(Riddle)

“I measured my peck and my pot and my quart with those of the market-woman ; my peck and pot were larger by a quart, than the m-w.'s peck and pot and quart.”—(So the difference between the two sets of measures was two quarts). There is a variant :—

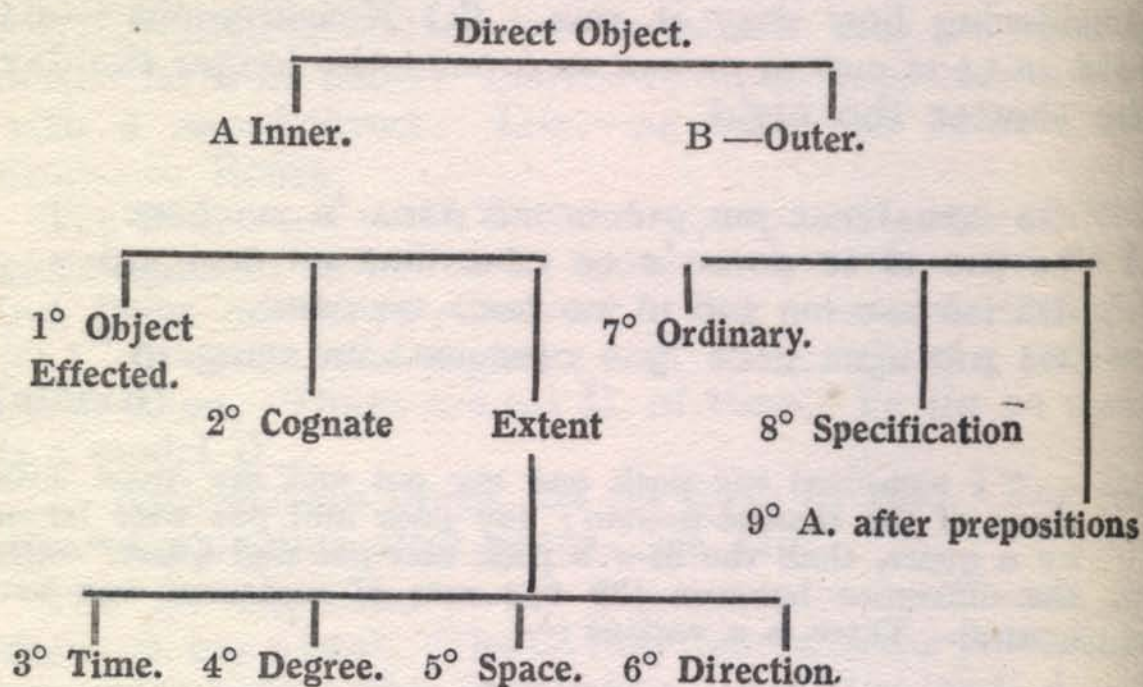
*Ba mó iad mo pic is mo pota de pic is de pota
ná pic 7 pota 7 cárt mná an margaid !*

(So the m-w.'s measures were just half the standard !)

(l) Time :—*ó ceann ceann na bliadna*—from one year's end to another ; *ón lá úr*—since the day. . . . (m) Origin :—*is de muintir Conaill me*—I'm an O'Connell. (n) Price :—*Oíolparó tu as an obair sin*—you'll pay for all that ; *cé méir a tugais ar an mbuin* ? How much did you give for the cow ? *Oo oíolas an oá buin ar éasaid púnt*—I sold the two cows for £50. (o) Plenty, and emptiness :—*Bí an seomra lán de daoimib beaga duba*—the room was full of little black folk ; *tá an áit follam ó daoimib*—the place is a wilderness ; *a n-aigne ciun ó fearg 7 ó buairt* (TBC. 5)—Her mind at rest from anger and worry.

For other meanings of the D. see 304.

175.—The Accusative :—The A. is the case of the direct object, *i.e.*, the object which defines directly the action of the verb. The object may be :—(a) virtually contained in the verb itself. This is called the Inner Object, the Object Effected. (b) Or distinct from the vb. This is called the Outer Object, the Object Affected. These distinctions give us the following scheme for the uses of the A.



C.—To denote the general object of thought, etc.
The Exclamatory A.

The A. after verbs, vb. nouns, and adjectives.

A. 1° The Inner Object:—*Do cruthuig Dia an domhan*—God created the world.

(God *made a creature*—the world. 2° The Cognate A. is a special form of the A. of the Inner Object :—*do buail sé buille orm*—he struck me a stroke. 3° The A. of Extent in Time :—*bíodar as feiceam fairs gac n-fairs* (bn. 264)—They were waiting ever so long ; *scaoil leis an bliam seo*—let it be for this year ; *is dóic liom go raib sí i ngráib leis go mór, tamall* (TBC. 5)—I think she was deeply in love with him for a while. 4° The A. of Extent in Degree :—*tá an leat-scéal san ró-caoil iarraict* (TBC. 188)—That excuse is a little too subtle ;

Ùí sé pas beas fuar—It was a little bit cold. N.B.—This A. is sometimes found in the Rel.—pé méro a beiró tú caillte leis (CMO. 318)—Whatever the amount that you are “down” through him ; ro cuas amuò a mórán—I went a deal astray. 5° The A. of Extent in Space :—Do éarla go raib ságarc as gabáil an treo (CMO. 317)—A priest happened to be going that way ; éanaoas siubal don lae ar agharó (CMO. 71)—They advanced a day’s journey. 6° **Terminal A.**—ro gluais an deatac an sinné amac (S.)—The smoke went out the chimney ; an té ná tagann an doras isteach (CMO. 311)—He who cometh not in through the door ; ná h-impuiró uairó deiseal ná tuatail (bñ. 256)—Turn not away from it, right or left.

B.—The Outer Object :—7° Ordinary exx.—b’sin é a loic idó—That’s what destroyed them ; ná bris nós—do not violate a custom.

8° The A. of Specification :—An té is lag creideam—He who is weak as to faith ; An té is mó práróinn, is e is cinnte beir ar deiread (up.)—The one in greatest hurry is sure to be last ; ní feicimse doimne annso is mó gáir leis an mbia seo ná mé féin (CO. 29)—I see no one here in more need of this food than myself. 9° The A. after prepositions : See 162.

C.—The Exclamatory A.—Used interjectionally in such expressions as :—An t-amadóan—the fool ! An fear boct—the poor fellow ! Ac grá a éabairt dóib ! (CMO. 317)—But to think of loving them !

176 (a).—Muna mbeaó, “only for” in such expressions as :—muna mbeaó é, muna mbeaó Seán—Only for him, S., may be said to take the A., if we are to look upon it as identical with O.I. ma-ni-bad, which took an A. owing to cen (=san) with which it is almost identical in meaning.

(b) The Projected A.—1° ro beinn toiltéanac ar scrí cuige, ac out cum cannte leis, ní féaróim—I should be willing to write to him, but as to giving him a personal interview—I couldn’t ! (Rhetorical for—ní féaróim out cum cannte leis). 2° Déra dam a Dé, cé no béra acht tu ? (Quoted by Kuno Meyer, PIM. 13)—Who will give me tears but Thou, o God ?

(c) **The Virtual A.**—*Ní féadfaid a dóiceall a déanamh ac an t-uan do m'arbhú* (CMO. 247)—All he can do, at his best, is to slay the lamb. *An t-uan*, virtual A. The sentence is an abbreviation of—*Ní féadfaid a dó. (puinn eile) a dó., ac (féadfaid sé) an t-uan do m'arbhú ; cad a déanfaid mac an éadú ac an luc a m'arbhú ?*—What should the kitten do but kill a mouse ! *an luc*—virtual A. The sentence is a contamination (309) of ques. and ans.—*Cad a déanfaid mac an éadú ? (Ar nóm ní déanfaid sé a m'alairt) ac (déanfaid sé) an luc a m'arbhú !*

177.—The Vocative Case :—That of direct address. As it expresses no relation to any other word, it presents no syntactical difficulties. The V. of *Óia*, God, is, in mod. I. *a Óia*, probably to avoid confusion with *a gé* (Goose !).

178.—The Verbal Noun :—I. Its ordinary use, in N.G.D.A., or abs. II. In phrases where the agent and the object of the action are both expressed. III. In a passive sense. IV. In answers to questions, etc.

I (a) N.—*Is usa do camal gabáil tré cró snáctaroe, ná do'n tóime saróibir eul istead i rígeacht na b'flaitéas*—It is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of heaven ; *níor gáid óo teacht na dtreo i n-aon éor an lá san* (CMO. 334)—He needn't have come to meet them that day at all.

(b) Projected N.—*Ac eul a baile na teannta súo, níor maic liom san*—But to go home with that fellow ! I shouldn't like it.

(c) Virtual N.—*Do beaó náire orm eul istead*—I'd be ashamed to go in ; *tá ádas orm bualaó umat*—I'm pleased to meet you.

(d) Absolute :—*i n-ágaró gac casaó i átrú dá dtéigead ar an gceol, téigead a comérom d'átrú ar gluaiseacht na ndaoine* (S.)—For every change and turn that came upon the music, a corresponding change took place in the people's movements ; *ní deirim ná gur fearroe tu beic do' donar*—I'm inclined to think you're better alone.

(e) **Genitive :—***Cailín deas crúrote na mbó*—The

pretty milk-maid ; *Cearo déanta crocán scriað* (K.)—an artificer of earthen pots ; *Seobpar fear a gonta fós* (TBC. 117)—We'll find a man to wound him yet.

(f) **Dative** :—*Do togas-sa ó tosac iad, san iad do déanamh don ruada cum an toga san do tuilleam* (CS)—I have chosen them from the beginning, without their having done anything to merit that choice ; *Bi an grian as taitneamh ortá, 7 bíodar as glacað na gréine* (CMO. 333)—The sun was shining, and they were sunning themselves.

(g) **Accusative** :—1° *Annsan go scaitfrois fanamaint amuis, mar a mbeað sol 7 díosgán fiacal* (CMO. 331)—That then they should have to remain outside, where there would be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 2° A. after *san* :—*Níor mairt liom san out a baile*—I shouldn't like not to go home. 3° A. after *roir*, *go*, etc.—*roir oscailt na ndóirse, 7 noctað na n-urcóiríeac*—Both the opening of the doors, and the exposure of the culprits ; *go beic dá créactaib cneasuighe* (K.)—Until his wounds were healed ; *tré out inguais is eað tuiteann a lán*—Many fall through courting dangers.

II. Agent and Object in vb. n. phrase :—*Is iongna liom é do togað na n-arm san* (TBC)—I'm surprised that he chooses those weapons ; Sometimes the agent is expressed by a rel. particle :—*Ní tu ba mairt liom o'fagáil báis ar an gcuma san*—It isn't you I should like to die thus ; when the obj. is a pron., the latter must precede the vb. n., so that agent and object come together, connected generally by *as* (s) :—*O'romuis sé náró' féirir a mairt do lot, toisc mé gá tabairt uaim ar son an tsíanuigheora* (S. 62)—He admitted it was impossible to mar the good it did, since I gave it away for the Saviour's sake.

III. The vb. n. in passive sense :—*Bailigir an cogal ar dtúis, 7 ceangalaró é na punannaib le dógað* (CMO.)—Gather up first the cockle, and bind it into bundles to burn (=to be burned) ; *Ná leog-se mo cúro pola do doirtað* (Bn. 407)—Do not allow my blood to be spilt.

The vb. n. is negatived by *san* :—*Dubairt sé liom é*

ʔéanam—He told me to do it ; ʔubairt sé liom gan é
ʔéanam—He told me not to do it.

IV. In answers to questions, etc.—Cao cúige ʔóib
beir as masao fúinn ? É beir tuille asainn—Why are
they making fun of us ? Because we've deserved it !
(=é beir tuille asainn pé noeár é, or some such thing);
Hamlet do teact istead—Enter H. (tagann h. istead
is rank béarlačas) ; an duine a bí gan lút a géas 'a
leigeas as Críost (CS. 90, Title of Chap.)—C. heals the
sick of the palsy.

179.—Phrase Nouns:—I.—The Bracketed Construction
(See 171). Further exx.—cun (gabáil de cosaib i gcómaet
an áirseora) (CMO. 4)—to quell the power of the devil ;
fan (bruač na mara san) (CMO. 81)—along that sea-
shore ; tar éis (óioḡaltas do baint amach) (Smb. 80)—
after wreaking vengeance. N.B. gabáil, bruač, óioḡaltas
are absolute.

II. The Unbracketed Construction :—Phrase nouns may
also be unbracketed, i.e., the fundamental n. or pron.
functions as N. G. D. or A. In the phrase “ceist a
cur”—to put a question—ceist may be :—

(a) Subj. N. :—1° to the vb. is—ba maic liom ceist
a cur ort—I should like to put you a question.
2° Appositional N.—Tá sé com maic asainn ceist a cur
air—we may as well put him a question. 3° Projected
N.—ac ceist a cur air, níor maic liom san—but as for
putting him a question, I shouldn't like it. 4° Virtual
N.—beaó eagla orm ceist a cur air—I should be afraid
to put him a question.

(b) Predicate N. to is :—'Sé ruo a oim íosa ná ceist
a cur cúca (CMO. 336)—Jesus simply put them a ques-
tion.

(c) Genitive.—ʔ'éis na ceiste cur cúca ʔ'mtíg
sé uata—when he had put them the question, he left
them.

(d) Dative.—Óa mbeaó uaim aise ar ceist a cur
cúca—if he had had time to put them a question.

(e) Accusative :—1° After transitive vb.—ʔ'óruiḡ sé
dom ceist a cur air—he bade me put him a question.
2° After gan—gan ceist a cur ar doinne—to question
nobody. 3° After roir—roir ceist a cur 7 freagra do

glacaid—both putting a question, and receiving an answer. (f) **Virtual A.**—ní féadfaínn a d'éanamh ac an ceist a cur cúda—I could only put them the question.

III. Adverbial Noun-Phrases :—(a) Níl rí acu nár táinig breis 7 líon a tríoča céad (TBC. 37)—Every King of them has come with more than the complement of his barony. (b) Bí gach don ruo iompuiḡte láitread, caob síos suas, 7 caob soir siar (bñ. 634)—Everything was forthwith turned completely topsy-turvy. See 175 A. 4°.

IV.—Prepositional Noun-Phrases :—These may be :—
 (a) **Subj. N.** :—1° To the vb. is :—Níorb fíú duit gan fanamaint liom (S. 19)—It wasn't worth your while not to wait for me. 2° **Appositional N.**—Tá sé com mairt agat gan dul a baile anocht—You may as well not go home to-night. 3° **Projected N.**—Gan dul a baile, an ead?—Not go home, is it? 4° **Virtual N.**—Beadh náire orm gan é tabairt do—I'd be ashamed not to give it to him. 5° **N. after go dtí** :—go dtí tréis mórán aimsire (AR. 103)—until after a long time. (b) **Pred. N. to is** :—'Sé comairle tug sé dom ná gan dul a baile a tuille—He advised me not to go home any more. (c) **Absolute** :—Níor misde duit gan é innsint dúinn—It wouldn't have been amiss if you hadn't told us. (d) **Genitive** :—1° Toisc gan iad a beic ann (CS. 5)—because they are not. 2° Cúin gan é d'éanamh (MSp. 137)—for not doing it. 3° Ar feadh i bfad—for a long time. 4° I n-éagmuis gan don coinne a beic acu (bñ)—in addition to their not expecting. . . . 5° Cúin gan don tsuim a cur sa cáinn (CMO. 53)—for not attending to the words. (e) **Dative** :—1° Aníos ó m-aice an baile móir (S. 130)—up from somewhere near town. 2° Ó roim Ábraham a beic ann (CS. 251)—before A. was made. 3° Le gan an scoil do caiteam cuige (MSp. 159)—for not relinquishing the school to him. 4° Ar roir sagart 7 daoine (CMO. 15)—upon both priest and people. 5° Ó roim an éirge amac (Smb. 147)—since before the Rising. (f) **Accusative** :—1° After trans. vb.—Dubairt sé liom gan bac leis a tuille—he told me not to mind it any more. 2° After gan—Gan roir leabair is peictiúirí do dógad—without

burning both books and pictures. 3° After *tré*—*Tré gan aire tábairt dó*—owing to inattention. 4° **Virtual A.**—*Ní dubairt sé liom ac gan don dá cur a déanam oem' díceall*—he told me just to do my level best.

180.—Noun Clauses :—Like other nouns, these may be either N.G.D.A. or abs. :—A. Nom. noun-clauses :—
(a) Subj. N.—1° To is :—*Níor maic liom go ndéanfa a leitéro*—I shouldn't like you to do such a thing. 2° Appos. N.—*Tá sé ráirte ná ndéanfa éire cú ve máda-rua*—it has been said that “nothing will make a silk purse out of a sow's ear.” 3° Projected N.—*Go ndéanfa sí an fear san, is deacair é tuiscint*—that she should have worked this treachery is hard to believe. 4° Virtual N.—*Bí náire uirri go raib sí cóm dána sin* (SmB. 138)—she was ashamed of her boldness. 5° N. after *go* *rtí* :—*Go rtí go rtiofao Séadna*—till S. should come. (b) Pred. N.—*b'é ba maic liomsa ná ndéanfa go veo é*—I should really wish it were never done. (c) Genitive :—1° *Cun go ndéanfa é*—that it might be done. 2° *Toisc gur tugais céad punt dom* (S.)—seeing that you gave me £100. (d) Dative :—*Ní raib veinne aise ar gur é mac Dé é* (CMO. 92)—he was not certain that He was the Son of God. (e) Accusative :—1° After trans. vb.—*Nuair a tuig an fear boct cé bí aise ann* (SmB. 124)—when the poor fellow realised who it was. 2° After *gan*—*Ní beaó don iongna orm gion go ndéanfa é*—I shouldn't be surprised if you didn't do it.—*gion go*=O.I. *cen co*, without that lit.=although not, but sometimes=although. The clause “*go ndéanfa é*” is A. governed by *gan* (*gion*) ; while the clause “*gion go ndéanfa é*” is virtual N. 3° Appositional A.—*Ná cuirimis san ve masta ar ár nglóire, go rteicpimis ón gcrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross !

4° Absolute :—*Ní cuirpinn a catú go brát díom go mbemn pósta as amadán*—I should never cease to regret being married to a fool. 5° Virtually absolute :—*Ní fearfao sé a ráó ac ná tiofao sé arís*—The only rejoinder left him is that he'll not come again.

181.—Aspiration of noun is often **dynamic**, *i.e.*, employed to mark certain psychological distinctions :—(a) *ṽán móltá* (C^O)—a panegyric poem. (b) *ár bruač na fearrge*—on the sea-shore (indefinite) : *ár ṽruač na f.* on a (particular) shore of the sea. (c) *ṽume san cos*—a person without legs : *ṽume san cos*, one deprived of a particular leg. (d) *áirm cogair*—war-weapons (general) : *áirm cogair*, weapons for a particular war. (e) *culait shagairt*, a priest's dress (particular).

182.—Remarks on the Cases :—(a) *ṽios ann an lá san* (not *ár an lá san*)—I was there on that day. But—*ṽerò troscad ár an lá san*—that day will carry with it the obligation of fasting. (b) The D. pl. in *-ib* is often used **dynamically** :—*Cuirfir san rač ár ṽaoime*—that will make people prosperous : *ṽionn an rač ár ṽaoimib áirite*—some people are lucky. (c) The N. pl. for the G.—*ṽo lean sé ag sgrí leitreaca éigin ár an ṽtalam* (C^M^O. 305)—He continued writing certain letters on the ground.

183.—Number :—(a) *siubal lae*, a day's journey ; *siubal trí lá*, a three days' journey ; *1 scaiteam an cúig lá*, during (the period of) 5 days ; *an deic lá*, the (period of) ten days. But when the space of time is looked at in its component parts the pl. is used :—*ní raib don uair a' cluig 1 scaiteam na ndeic laeteanta san* there wasn't an hour during those ten days. (b) The sg. noun is often used in speaking of a multitude where English uses the pl. 1° *ná bíod ór ná airgead ná saróbreas 1 ṽtaisce aguib 1 nbur scrios* (C^M^O. 246)—Have neither gold nor silver nor any other kind of wealth in your girdles. 2° *ní féarparois a meabru n-a n-aighe* (T^B^C. 89)—they couldn't imagine. (c) But when the multitude act individually, the pl. is used :—*. . . . dom' fearaib bocta a bí ag mirt a n-anam* (G. pl.) *ag troir le nbur namaro* (ṽn.)—to my poor men who were risking their lives fighting against your enemies. (d) The sg. is used generally after *is mó*=many a :—*is mó ume bí 1 rioct sparám ṽ'fagáil 7 ná fuair*—many a man was on the point of getting a purse, and didn't. But the pl.

occurs when there is question of a class :—*is mó daoine na c' iad atá, riam ó som, as deanam an uile saḡas viciill ar an b'firimne sin do bogad' (CMO. 264)*—many other people besides them are ever since making every effort to discount that statement. (e) The sg. *an té* may mean "those who"—*An té is lúḡa ciail is é is mó camnt*—They who have least sense talk most. (f) The sg. is often used with numerals :—1° *Trí n'ó ḡan r'iaḡail—bean, muc 7 múille (UP.)*—Three ungovernable things—a woman, a pig, a mule ! 2° *Na trí ball is furus a ḡortuḡad'—súil, ḡlún 7 uille (UP.)*—The three members easily hurt—the eye, the knee and the elbow. 3° *ḡeallad' naoi mbó p'icead' dam le cailín duḡ burde ḡan céill. Ac mo mairḡ ḡur p'ós mé ariam í, is ainḡir na ḡcraob' 'mo v'éró (CCU. 104)*—I was promised 29 cows, and a dark yellow girl with no sense, Alas ! that I ever married her, leaving behind me the maid of the flowing hair !

CHAPTER III.

SYNTAX OF THE ADJECTIVE.

184.—An adj. is **attributive** when it qualifies the n. without the intervention of any verbal form :—*o'fíll an mac breoite*—the sick lad returned ; *o mairb Seán óg é*—young S. killed it. An adj. is **predicative** when attached to the n. only through the medium of a verb :—*tá an fosaíóeact san ana-breag*—that pasturage is very fine. The vb., however, may be present only by implication :—1° *o'fíll an mac 7 é breoite*—the lad returned sick. 2° *o mairb Seán 7 é óg é*—S. killed it when he was young. 3° *o mairb Seán é 7 é óg*—S. killed it young.

The **attributive** adj.—with the exceptions given below—follows its n. and agrees with it in gender, number and case, but not necessarily, of course, in declension :—*fearr mór*, a great man ; *fírr móra*, great men ; *bean maí*, a good woman ; *mná maí*, good women ; *mac an fírr móir seo*, this big man's son ; *mísean na mná maí*, that good woman's daughter.

185 (a).—The **Cardinals** from 1 to 10 precede their nouns, whether other numbers are added or not :—*trí bliadhna*, *trí bliadhna ficeas* (*seascas*, 7rl.), three, twenty-three (63) years. N.B.—*brós*, *óá bróis*, *trí bróga*—one, two, three shoes ; *aon brós*, any shoe ; *aon brós amáin*, one shoe.

(b) The **Ordinals**, also, except *tánaise*, *tánaiste* (2nd) precede the n.—*an dara h-aois déag*—the 12th century. But—*an aois tánaiste*—the 2nd age of life (from 7 to 16 years).

(c) The **pronom. adjs.**—*gac*, *gac aon*, *gac uile*, *an uile*, *gac 're* precede the n. Add to these the article, and the interrog. adjs., *cia*, *ca* :—*cionnus*, *conus*, how ; *canas*, where ; *ca h-uair*, when, etc.

(d) **Simple** adjs. (but not those with the suffixes -*ac*, -*mar*, -*amail*, -*da*, -*ta*, -*ta* ; nor participles) may precede the n. attributively, but then they form compounds, and often have a special shade of meaning :—*mór-cúis*, conceitedness : *cúis mór*, a grave reason ; *nuad-*fiadhnais**, New Testament ; *fiadhnais nua*, fresh evidence.

(e) **Deas**—good, **droc**—bad, always precede the n. After the n. and also when predicative *maic* and *olc* must be used :—*an deas-bean*, the good lady ; *droc-scéal*, bad news ; *níor b'ris focal maic fiacal riam*—a good word never did any harm ; *is maic bean deis-fir* (TBC. 1)—a good man's wife is good.

(f) **Sean**, old, often precedes the n., but also follows, both attributively and predicatively, though, when pred., *dostrá* is often preferred :—*an sean-scéal* i gcómnuróe—the old, old story ; *tá sé dostrá go maic*—he's fairly old. The prefixed *sean* is sometimes contemptuous or humorous :—*An sean-buaicail*—the devil. N.B.—*an tIomna Sean*, *an tIomna Nua*—the Old, the New Testament.

186.—The Ordinals are indeclinable. Before *donnmao*, *octrmao*, the art. is *an t-* (N. and A.) whether the n. is M. or F., and *na h-* in G. sg. F.—1° *an t-octrmao doise deas*, the 18th century : *lár na h-octrmao doise deas*, the middle of the 18th c. 2° *i dtosaic an octrmao caibrioil* (CMO. 231), in the beginning of the 8th chapter. 3° *céao*, 1st, is uninflected, as it forms a compound with the noun :—*peaca na céao mná* (CMO. 21), the 1st woman's sin. 4° *An tarna*, the 2nd, keeps this form in G. sg. F.—*i dtosaic an tarna h-doise*—in the beginning of the 2nd century. But—*i dtosaic na dara h-doise*.

187 (a) In mod. I. pred. adjs. are not inflected :—*is maic iad na fir cum na mban do cosc*—Men are good for checking women.

(b) Compar. and superl. adjs. are always pred. N. to some form of *is*, and are not inflected for gender or number. *Níos* (*níosa*) *níba* sometimes occur even after some form of *is* :—*tíocfaid an oisreac cúgac níba*

śābāltā an bótar díreac, bíod go mba níba rígne é (Lúc. 30)—the inheritance would have reached you more safely by the straight road, though it would have been slower.

(c) Certain adjs. do not admit comparison :—féidir, possible ; cuma, the same ; céadna, same ; eite, other ; uile, all ; numerals. In regard to féidir, one *could* say :—is móire is féidir duit é, más féidir leat é, it is all the more possible for you, if you think it so.

(d) “Less” and “least” are usually rendered by lúgá with A. of Specification :—ní feaca riam don bean ba lúgá tuisgint ná í—I never saw a less intelligent woman. In the first member of a Proportion sentence (212) “the less” is dá luigead :—Dá luigead í an tuisgint is ead is mó an tuistact cum cainte—the less the intelligence, the greater the propensity to talk.

(e) Níos, níosa, níba, are often strengthened by the addition of a numeral, generally dá or seact :—1° Do beadh oic níba seact measa ná é tagaite air (TBC. 10)—A very much greater evil would have come upon him. Níosa eclipses r :—Tá sé i bfead níosa bfearr moiu—he’s much better to-day. 2° Tá sé níosa dá measa ná mar a bí—he’s twice as bad as he was. 3° Sometimes the thought is fully expressed :—Do beadh oic ba seact n-uaire níba measa tagaite air.

188 (a) When several adjs. are used of the same n. or pron. agus is often absent, when the adjs. are of similar meaning, or when one of them is merely intensive :—1° Caitín ciúim ciallmhar (S.)—a quiet, sensible girl. 2° Lá breag bog—a beautifully soft day. 3° Nac breag bog a tagadh cainte cúgac !—how very easily you talk !

(b) When the adjs. or advs. express quite different ideas, or when there is a gradation, or a climax, agus is used :—1° Bí an cainte go láidir, 7 go ciallmhar 7 go bunadhasac—the words were strong, and sensible and to the point. 2° Tá sé go holc, 7 go h-ana-oic, 7 go malluigte—he’s bad, very bad, even vicious. 3° Śā śā śā go h-áró, 7 go ceolmhar 7 go binn (CMO. 378)—chanting it aloud, musically, melodiously. 4° Do dúlctuigdar go tur 7 go fuactmhar, 7 go seasmac (CMO.

384)—they refused, not only with dourness, but with hatred and obstinacy.

189.—**Participial** adjs. are used with *τá* in an elliptical construction :—1° *τá rítte leat tamall maít gan vóil as* (TBC. 6)—you've run a good while without punishment. 2° *τá itte γ ólta aḡamn*—we've eaten and drunk. 3° *Ófuit críocnuigte aḡat?*—have you finished?

190.—The **Dual** adj. has the same form as the pl. Its initial is ordinarily aspirated :—*ṵá bróis ṵeasa*—two nice shoes ; *ṵá súil ḡorma*—two blue eyes ; *ṵá sáḡart ṵiaṵasaṁla*—two pious priests. When *ṵá* is preceded by the G. pron. *a*, that pron. may aspirate or eclipse the init. *ṵ-* according to circumstances ; in which case *ṵá* will asp. the following consonant :—*Ṵi na ḡlomí na nṵá ṵorn acu*—they had the glasses in their two fists. Or the *ṵ-* of *ṵá* may be aspirated in all cases, and then the pron. produces its natural effect on the n.—*a ṵá ṵorn*—her two fists ; *a ṵá ṵorn*—his two fists ; *a ṵá nṵorn*—their two fists ; *γ a ṵá ḡcroíde ṵá sníom le buairt* (Mac. 263)—and their two hearts rent with anxiety. This seems to be the Conn. and W. Kerry usage :—*a ṵá béal buailte ar a céile* (SmṪ. 17)—her two lips tightly closed. In “*n-a ṵá súil ḡlais*” (SmṪ. 15)—in her two grey eyes—the adj. is irregular for *ḡlasa* (due to the sg., *na súil ḡlais*).

191 (a) *τρί, četne, cúis, sé* may take a sg. or a pl. n.—*τρί capall* or *τρί capall*. The aspiration here may be due to O.I. *trí chét* (300), where *cét* is a true pl., and aspiration is regular.

(b) *τρί* and *četne* were declined in O.I. and so eclipse in G. *Cúis* and *sé* eclipse analogically—*γ ḡcíonn na ṵtrí mblian ṵéas*, at the end of the 13 years ; *ainmírote na ḡcetne ḡcos*, the four-footed animals ; *ar son na ḡcúis ḡcúisí*—for the 5 provinces, etc.

(c) Besides the ordinary method of counting, observe : (a) *seáct ḡcinn ṵéas de buaib*—seventeen head of cows. This form is used when the numeral is compound, and the n. has an adj. attached :—*četne cinn píceao de*

capallib duba—24 black horses. (b) trí deic a seacht de blianaib (CMO. 9)—37 years. (c) seacht n-uaire pé seacht noic (CMO. 292)—seventy times seven times. (d) céad oit noic a cúig de mítib fear (Mac. 7)—185,000 men. (e) sa bliain céad dá deic a sé—in the year 126.

192.—Pronominal Adjectives :—(a)—The possessives *mo*, etc., are G. (sg. and pl.) of the personal pronouns used (like G. nouns) as adjectives.

(b) Interrogative Adjectives :—

1° These (along with *n.*) are always pred. N. to *is* understood :—Conus (a) tadoi?—How are you? = Ca ionnus (an ionnus) a tadoi? Cf. Conn.—Cia dao a bfuil tu?

2° Even when *the clause itself* is under government the interrog. adj. remains pred. N. to *is* :—Cumingeas sé ar conus mar a tuit pallaí ároa láire na catrae san cun taimh anuas (CMO. 81)—He would think of how the strong high walls of that city tumbled to the ground.

3° So, when the clause is absolute :—Ní raib fíos acu cia'cu duine bí acu—they knew not with which one they were dealing.

193.—Noun-clauses introduced by interrog. adjs. may be N.G.D.A. or absolute.

1° **Nom.**—(a) To *is* :—ní heol dom conus a deim sé e—I don't know how he did it ; ní cumm liom cia'cu ceann adubairt sé ba measa—I forget which one he said was worst. (b) Pred. N. to *is* :—Sí ceist a cuir sé cúca ná cia'cu duine ba dóic leo ba cómursa do'n duine bí i bpém—the question He put them was simply this, which one they thought was neighbour to the man in pain. (c) Appositional N.—Tá sé soiléir go maic cia'cu duine acu atá cionntac—it's plain enough which one of them is guilty.

2° **Absolute.**—Ní raib fíos agam cia'cu leabhar adéar-faimh ba deise—I didn't know which book I should call the nicest.

3° **Virtual N.**—Bí iongna orm cia'cu duine acu go raib an cion go léir aicé air—I wondered as to which of them she was so fond of.

4° Genitive.—*Ní raib ác tuairim acu i 'tadob cía'cu tuine acu bí acu*—they could only guess to which of them they were speaking.

5° Dative :—*Do cuimnígear ar conus mar a bíodar féin as obair* (CMO. 378)—they reflected on how they themselves had been working.

6° Accus.—*Do tuig an t-actair gear go nálaim conus is ceart fadluinn a scrí*—Fr. P. knew perfectly how I. should be written.

194.—Fem. adjs. in D. sg. sometimes resist inflection. At times this may be explained on the phrase-noun principle :—*isteach i sclais beas* (CMO. 80)—into a little hole ; *as an lánamain ós* (CMO. 110)—at (by) the young couple ; *ar cloic mór trom* (LMC. 42)—on (of) a big heavy stone ; *i sráir uachtaraí uí Conaill* (Smb 135)—in Up. O'C. St. ; *disting a tamic eugam aréir, a mearuig 7 a breoir mo éoróe, ar óis-mháoí deas maiseac a tamic eugam le n-a póis san oíoc'* (C.C.U. 100)—A vision came to me last night, that quickened and sickened my heart, of a fair lovely young woman who came to me with her kiss in the night ; *trío an scaitir beas* (CMO. 159)—through the little town ; *cuir sí isteach ar an scainnt bladarac seo* (Smb. 164)—she interrupted this insinuating language. Sometimes the fem. adj. is inflected—*doimne de'n lánamain óis* (bn. 577)—any one of the young couple.

CHAPTER IV.

SYNTAX OF THE PRONOUN.

195.—The Personal Pronouns.—These are fully declined, having N. G. D. and A. forms. The N. forms may be absolute :—

(a) In the Bracketed Construction :—1° Δο' ιαρραϊὸ ἐ λεῖγαὸ ἀνυῶς ἀρ ἀν ὀταλαῖν (CMO. 325)—trying to throw Him on the ground. 2° Τρέις ἰ τεᾶττ ἰστεᾶτ—when she had come in. 3° Ὅα ὀτοῖλιζῖνν ἐνν τῦ ζᾶ μαρβᾶὸ (bñ. 406)—were I to consent to your killing him. 4° λε ἡνν ἰς ἑῖτ ἄς τεᾶττ (bñ. 545)—while she was coming.

(b) When they are the term of proleptic Δ, οε, ἀν, etc.—1° Ὅοβ' φεᾶρρὸε ἀον κόμαῖρτε ἰ ἑῖτ ἀνν (ΔR. 38)—any council would have benefited by her presence. 2° ἰς μόρὸε μο μῖαν ἐ ἐλὸς τῦσα ἑῖτ ζᾶ ρᾶὸ σᾶν ἡῖομ (ψΔ.)—I desire to hear it all the more since you tell me that. 3° Cῖα'cu ἐ ἐρὸῶὸ νό ἐ λεοζᾶντ σᾶορ ἰς ρὸζᾶ ἡῖο ?—which is your choice, to have him hanged or acquitted ?

(c) After ἰς φῖῦ=is worth, is worthy of, and speaking generally, wherever there is logical, without grammatical, apposition—ἡῖ φῖῦ ἰ ἐ—it is not worth it.

196.—The personal pronouns :—

(a) In virtual Nom.—1° Ὀῖ ἄτᾶς μόρ ἄῖρ ἰᾶὸ ὀὸ τεᾶττ (ΔR. 8)—he was delighted that they came. 2° Τᾶ κατῦ ὀρμ ἰ ἐᾶῶᾶῖρτ ρῖᾶῖν ὀὸ (bñ. 803)—I'm sorry I ever gave her to him. 3° Ὀῖ κατῦ ἀρ ἡᾶ ζᾶεὸῖλ ἰᾶὸ ὀὸ ὀῦλ ἄς κόμ σᾶορ (ΔR. 89)—the Irish were sorry that they (the enemy) got off so lightly.

(b) As A. of Extent in Space.—Δρ σῖῦῖᾶῖς ἐ ζὸ λεῖν ? —did you walk the whole way ?

197.—The G. forms are usually either :—

(a) Possessive :—*mo leabhar-sa*—my book, or—

(b) Subjective :—*is móire mo mian é clos*—my desire to hear it is all the greater.

(c) Objective :—*tátar cum bur marbta*—they're going to kill you.

(d) Partitive (but only within certain limits) :—*a leat*—half of it (them) ; *a bfuirmór*—the most of them. Generally partitive *de* or *as* (with D. of course) :—*an cúro is mó acu* ; *a lán asainn*—many of us ; *cúro asuib*—some of you.

When the n. is V. the G. of the personal pronoun is usually not expressed in mod. I.—*a tigearna Dia*—my Lord God ; *a Dia na glóire*—O ! my God Almighty ; *a Cáit a laoig*—my dear Cáit. In—*ár n-atair atá ar neam*—*ár* is retained on account of its theological importance.

198 (a) The D. forms are found (suffixed) with those preps. that governed the D. alone ; never after *ar*, sometimes after *m*.

(b) These prons. as well as nouns, may be in the virtual A. (176, c).

(c) Besides the ordinary emphatic particles, *fém* is sometimes attached :—1° *Cuair sé fém 7 iad san ar bóro na tuinge* (CMO. 254)—Both He and they embarked. 2° *Bíodar aradon ann, é fém 7 í fém*—They were both there, he and she (man and wife).

(d) For the conjunctive and disjunctive uses of 3 sg. and 3 pl. forms, see 110.

Prolepsis (199—216).

199 (a) The first use of the personal pronouns was analeptic, *i.e.*, retrospective, referring to some person, place, thing, group or name already mentioned. Prolepsis means the anticipatory use, referring to a noun, pronoun, phrase or clause to follow, and pronouns so used are called proleptic.

(b) The general rule governing prolepsis may be stated thus :—1° When the proleptic pronoun is N. or A. governed by a transitive vb., the “term” is likewise

N. or A. 2° When the proleptic pron. is G. D. A. governed by a prep., or absolute, then the term is absolute.

(c) The following pronouns are used proleptically in mod. I.—A.—é, í, íað, eað. B.—sé. C.—san.

D.—so, seo. E.—é sin. F.—sroé (sroí, sroíað). G.—The 3 sg. G. pron. a. H.—The 3 pl. G. pron. a. I.—The suffixed prons. (D. or A.) after many preps., notably, oe, acu, air, uime, leis, cuige, amháin.

200.—Proleptic é, í, íað, eað :—

1° All four are used in Identification Sentences to anticipate the predicate in Types I, II, III, VIII, IX, and X. (See Syntax of the Copula).

2° é, í and íað are also used proleptically to anticipate :—(a) the subject in interrog. sentences :—Cao é an áit as ar tuisis cúgaimn an mada so? (Lúc. 42)—Where did you bring this dog from? (b) Sometimes outside interrog. sentences :—Is líonmair íað a mburóne (TBC. 148)—numerous are their battalions. But the next sentence has, without any proleptic pron.—is glémeac taitneamh a n-éirí 7 a n-arm—their armour and weapons gleam brightly.

3° In other than is sentences é is used proleptically :—(a) In the Nom.—Ní verò orm é tabairt le ráð dóibh sur dmeas é—I shan't have to give them to say that I did it. (b) In the A.—Dem é fógaírt go scuipar an cime cum báis—have it announced that the prisoner will be put to death. (c) Virtual N.—Tá ádas ortá é beir le ráð acu go breacadar an rí—they are glad to have it to say that they saw the king. (d) Absolute :—Tá a fíos acu é beir socair go ndorpar é—they know it is settled that he will be condemned. (e) Appositional N.—Tá sé ag goilleamaint orm é beir socair, go . . . I'm worried that they have arranged that . . .

N.B.—In all these exx. the “term” is to be parsed according to rule given in 199 (b).

201.—Proleptic sé :—(a) Tá sé uaigneac a beir folam (UP.)—its a lonesome thing to be empty. (b) An té a mberó sé na cinnemam é crocad, ca báirtéar go brát é (UP.)—He who is destined to be hanged will

never be drowned ! (c) *níl sé ceart agat an sgeál do glacadh óm bogh* (AR. 40)—you should not take things so easily. (d)—*Ói sé an-áiseamhail aige áit dá sórt beic aige le leitreáda a sgríobhadh ann* (SmB. 129)—he found it very convenient to have such a place to write letters in.

202.—Proleptic *san* :—*Ná cuirimis san de masta ar ár nglóire go dtéirimis ón gcrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross. *San* denotes “the distant object.” For the Christian “to shirk the cross” is an odious thing, and should be put far from him. *San* is here utterly contemptuous.

203.—Proleptic *so, seo* :—*1° Cao a tús so dómsa máthair mo tighearna do teacht ag triall orm ?* (CS. 140)—Whence is this to me that the Mother of my Lord should come to me ? *So* denotes that which is near the speaker. Pleasant things are brought near in thought and imagination. *2° Ac cuireadh so buairt ort, san tu beic óm mair ná óm h-airead ort féin 7 ba ceart do dúine démhóiread a beic i seirbhís Dé* (Im. 224)—But be troubled about this, that thou art not as good or as watchful over thyself as a devout person should be in God’s service.

Good advice is brought “near the mind’s eye.” Note that *so* is much stronger than either *sé*, or *é*.

204.—Proleptic *é sin* :—*1° Agus má’s fíor é, a fíor tighis, cao é sin o’ doinne eile sin ?* (TBC. 16)—And if it’s true, Mr. Steward, what’s that to anyone else ? *2° Cao é sin duitse 7 dómsa san ?* (CMO. 110)—What is that to thee or to Me ? In these exx. *é sin* is primarily analeptic, but *sin, san*, are added at the end to satisfy the proleptic tendency of *é sin*. When *é sin* is analeptic it refers ordinarily to a M. (or orig. neut.) noun. But when proleptic, it may refer to either gender, either number, and any of the three persons :—*3° Cao é sin dúinne tusa ?* (CS. 21)—What art Thou to us ? *Cao é sin dúinne sibse ?*—What are ye to us ? *Cao é sin daoibse i síú ?*—What is such a woman to you ? *4°*

This proleptic *é sin* (preceded by *cáð*) often anticipates another *cáð* (*cíá*) question :—(a) *Cáð é sin dó san cáð a óéanparó an áro-rígeaéct?* (N. 296)—What is it to him how it fares with the High-Kingship? (b) *Cáð é sin dúinne cíá'cu 'tááar socaír aír nó ná fuiltear* (N. 315)—What is it to us whether they have decided on it or not? N.B.—Pred. of 1st is.—*Cáð dúinne*. Subj.—*é sin* (proleptic) : Real subj.—*cíá'cu fuiltear*. Pred. of 2nd is (understood with *cíá*)—*cíá'cu fuiltear*. Subj.—*é*, *understood*.

205.—Proleptic *síóé* (*síóí*, *síóíad*) :— :—*Síóé is mó a cóisceann sólas ó Óíá ar teaéct cuáat, a óeacraéct teaéct íompáil cún úrnuíáte* (Im. 150)—This is what mostly prevents heavenly consolation from reaching you, the difficulty you experience in turning to prayer. Note that *síóé* is stronger than *is é*.

206.—The proleptic G. sg. *a* :—There are three uses:—

I.—Before a vb. n. to anticipate the object of the action (when this is a phrase or clause which cannot be inflected) ; also before nouns like *buróeacás* which imply action.

II.—Before a n. denoting quality, quantity, time, intensity, meaning, and similar notions, to anticipate—(a) the action itself (verb) ; (b) a noun which is not a noun of action at all ; (c) a pronoun.

III.—Before a noun denoting state, condition, etc., to anticipate a *τá* clause.

207.—Before a verbal noun :—1° *Óíóó a fíos an méro seo ááaíb so úfuil rígeaéct Óé i n-ááamaíreaéct* (CMO. 314)—Know ye this, that the Kingdom of God is at hand. 2° *Óíá líom a ráó teaéct so úfuilpíró mé fém* (SmB. 112)—I can tell you I shall return myself. 3° In Conn. I. proleptic *a* is sometimes absent :—*Áá íarraíró ar an easboc smaéct a cúr ar an saáart* (SmB. 125)—requesting the bishop to keep the curate in order. Strict I. idiom requires *áá íarraíró*.

208.—Before equivalently vb. nouns :—1° *a Óíá*,

beirim a buídeachtas leat ná fuilim-se mar an cúro eile
 de sna daoine (CMO. 359)—O God, I thank Thee that
 I am not like the rest of men. 2° Cao é a bríḡ feall
 Concubair seachtas an feall so? (TBC. 42)—What signi-
 fies C's. treachery compared with this?

209.—Before a non-vb. noun :—1° Agus a liachtaiḡe
 bean áluinn bí sa tír! (SmB. 153)—And there were so
 many fair women in the land! 2° Bí ionḡna a ḡcoróe
 ortá a feabhas a d'eimeadóar an ḡnó (S. 183)—They were
 amazed that they did the thing so well. 3° In U. and
 Conn. I. instead of proleptic a, we often find the fol-
 lowing :—Cumḡnḡ sí anois ar cóm minic is duḡairt sí
 le na mac (SmB. 34)—She thought now of how often she
 had told her son (=Munster I.—ar a miniciḡe aduḡairt;
 or—air, cao é a miniciḡe).

210.—Anticipating a “*τá*” clause :—1° ionḡna ortá
 a fáro atám uatá (TBC. 252)—surprised that I am so
 long away from them. 2° Cao é an beann a beaḡ aḡe
 siúro ar uisḡe te, ḡ a tēo atá an áit as a tóamḡ sé?
 (S. 113)—What should he care about hot water, con-
 sidering the heat of the place whence he came?

211.—Oá=however, notwithstanding, etc.—This is
 simply proleptic a preceded by the prep. oo or oe.
 At first a was analeptic. E.g.—i ḡcat oá tḡrime, i
 n-éḡm oá ḡéire, i spéirlinn oá d'éime (N.)—In battle
 for (all) its heaviness, in stress for (all) its sharpness,
 in combat for (all) its sternness. Here, cat, éḡm,
 spéirlinn are D. When a is proleptic these nouns become
 absolute :—oá tḡrime cat, oá ḡéire éḡm, oá d'éime
 spéirlinn. Take the Eng. sentence :—For all his clever-
 ness, he has made a mistake. The I. for this is like the
 E. with one important difference :—oá ḡastact é, tá
 dearmado déanta aḡe. The E. “he” is rendered in
 aḡe, and the I. é is not in the E. at all. There is another
 difference. When the E. possessive “he” changes for
 gender, number and person, “his” must change also.
 Thus—For all *her* cleverness, she has made a mistake.
 If I. followed the same scheme we should have—oá

ḡASTACCT (i) TÁ DEARMAD DEANTA AICÍ. So—O'AR ḡASTACCT (sinn) TÁ DEARMAD DEANTA AGAINN—for all *our* cleverness, etc. But this is not done. The 3 sg. form OÁ ḡASTACCT is *generalized* for both genders and numbers and all three persons. Once the principle of Generalization is understood the whole matter becomes quite simple. Examples :—1° OÁ FEABAS RÍ BÍONN OROC-ÓUINE ÉIGIN AR A TÍ (PSA.)—No matter how good a king may be, there is always some evil person to attack him. 2° OÁ TUIGEAD TU, NÍ LEANB TU—You may be small, but you're no child ! 3° CUIRPTÉAC UILE IS EAD É, OÁ STEAMÁINE A ḡIALL 7 OÁ ÓIGE A FÉACÁINT (TBC. 107)—He's a vicious wretch, though his jaw is so smooth and his look so young.

212.—Proportion :—Proportion sentences like “the more the merrier” are expressed in mod. I. by the formula :—OÁ IS EAD IS This is a further use of proleptic A found in OÁ :—1° OÁ LUATACCT A BEIMÍO TÍAR SA BÁILE IS EAD IS FEARR É (TBC. 118)—The sooner we are back at home, the better. 2° Oo tuig sí OÁ MÉIO 7 OÁ FÍRINNIGE É AN MOLAD GURB EAD IS MÓ AN CONNTABÁIRT (CMO. 32)—She knew that the greater and the juster the praise, the greater is the danger (to humility). 3° OÁ LUATACCT A BEROIS IMTÍGTE AS AN ḡCATÁIR, GURB EAD B'FEARRA OÓIB FÉM É (BN. 718)—that the sooner they left the city the better it would be for themselves. In order to understand the genesis of this formula, let us consider three stages :—

(a) The Mathematical stage :—OÁ FÁIO A RAḡAÍO SÍB AR AḡAÍO IS EAD IS ḡIORRA BERO SÍB DON BÁILE—The farther you advance the nearer you'll be to home. Here we are measuring spacial distance by spacial distance, and the measurement is mathematically accurate. The sentence is of the Type—PVpS. It is the emphatic form of—Is OÁ FÁIO A RAḡAÍO SÍB AR AḡAÍO IS ḡIORRA BERO SÍB DO'N BÁILE. And this is the complex, elliptical form of—Is É A FÁIO A RAḡAÍO SÍB AR AḡAÍO AN MÉIO STIGE N-ARB ḡIORRA BERO SÍB DO'N BÁILE DE. The subj. is absolutely clear—AN MÉIO STIGE DE, i.e., the distance by which you'll be nearer home ; the pred. is equally clear—

Δ $\dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ Δ Δ $\dot{\text{g}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ —the distance you shall advance, and the statement is mathematically accurate.

(b) The Intermediate stage :— $\text{Dá } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ $\text{an } \text{lá}$ $\text{is } \text{ea}\text{o}$ $\text{is } \text{giorra } \text{an } \text{oí}\text{o}\text{ce}$ —the longer the day, the shorter the night. Here a certain “looseness” has crept in. When we analyse it we shall find an inexactitude which was not in the previous sentence. The unemphatic form is— $\text{Is } \text{dá } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ $\text{an } \text{lá}$ $\text{is } \text{giorra } \text{an } \text{oí}\text{o}\text{ce}$. And this is the complex, elliptical form of— $\text{Is } \text{é } \Delta \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ $\text{an } \text{lá}$ $\text{an } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ $\text{n-}\Delta\text{rb } \text{giorra } \text{an } \text{oí}\text{o}\text{ce } \text{óe}$. The subj. is clear now— $\text{an } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ óe —the length by which the night is shorter ; and the pred. is— $\Delta \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ $\text{an } \text{lá}$ —the length of the day (*lit.*—the length of it—the day). But this is not true, taken literally. The length by which the night is shorter is *not* the length of the day, but rather the increase in length. The formula which was “above suspicion” in (a) is now used with a little latitude—that is all.

(c) The Final stage :—The formula is now used for all kinds of proportion :— $\text{Dá } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ Δ $\text{leogfár } \text{i n-}\Delta\text{isge } \text{léi } \text{é}$, $\text{is } \text{ea}\text{o}$ $\text{is } \text{dána } \text{leanfár } \text{sí } \text{óe}$ (S. 119)—The longer she’s let off with it, the more brazenly she’ll stick to it.—Emphatic form of— $\text{Is } \text{dá } \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ é , $\text{is } \text{dána}$ óe . And this is the complex elliptical form of— $\text{Is } \text{é } \Delta \dot{\text{p}}\text{a}\text{i}\text{o}$ é , $\text{an mé}\text{o}$ $\text{leanfár } \text{sí } \text{óe } \text{óe}$ —the extent to which she’ll stick to it more brazenly is the length of time she’s let off ! That “time” should be a fit measure of “increase in boldness” is only accidental. The real causes of the increase in boldness were in operation as time went on, and so the passage of time is used loosely as the measure of the increase.

The following exx. from U.I. recall some of the formulae used in early mod. I.—1° $\text{níl } \text{dá } \text{mé}\text{o}$ Δ $\text{teactaire naó mó}\text{r}\text{oe na gnótuigte}$ (*sic*) (UP.)—The greater the envoy, the more important the business. 2° $\text{Dá mó}\text{r}\text{oe mé}\text{o}\text{das tu } \Delta\text{r } \Delta$ $\text{grán}\text{o}\text{a gan bonn}$, $\text{dá mó}\text{r}\text{oe istigéas tu}$ (UP.)—The more you elevate an ugly person of no merit, the more you lower him. With $\text{mó}\text{r}\text{oe}$, here, cf.— $\text{'Sa gcú glaca re namaro dá móire}$ (ΔÓR. 66)—And their hound in battle against the greatest foe. For

K's six ways of expressing Proportion, see "Studies in Modern Irish," Pt. IV, pp. 38-41.

213.—The 3 pl. G. pronoun **Δ** :—1° **Δ**n **ο**τιο**ς**φαι**ο** **Δ** **ο**ρμ**ο**ρ so slán ó'n **ς**co**ς**α**ο** (TBC. 29)—Whether the most of these will come safely out of the war. 2° **Β**i **Δ**ςα**μ** **Δ** **ς**co**μ**meas san **ο**e m**α**ca**ι**b uas**α**l (TBC. 2)—I had as many more sons of Nobles (Here, so and san are absolute).

214.—The Suffixed Pronouns :—I. **ο**e :—(a) Apart from Comparatives :—**Β**i **ο**e**μ**n**ι**ς**τ**ea**ς** **ο**e, **ς**o n-osc**α**ló**φ**ar **Δ** **ς**ú**ι**te l**α**i**τ**rea**ς** (**ο**n. 585)—Be assured that his eyes will be opened promptly. (b) With Comparatives :—1° **Ν**i **φ**ea**ο**ar **Δ**n **φ**ea**ρ**ro**e** **ι**α**ο** **Δ**r **τ**u**ς**as **ο**ó**ι**b (S. 56)—I wonder are they anything the better of all I gave them. 2° **Β**α m**ο**ro**e** mo **ς**o**ν**as **Δ**r **Δ**n **ς**ao**ς**al **é** (Sm**ο**. 30)—My earthly happiness would have been all the greater (**é**, abs.). 3° **Ι**s **τ**eo**ρ**o**e** **ο**o'n m**β**ra**τ** **Δ** **ο**ú**β**la**ο** (UP.)—The blanket is the warmer for being doubled ! (Said when relations marry). The subj. here is **é** (understood). Another form—**Ι**s **τ**eo**ρ**o**e** **Δ**n **β**ra**τ** **Δ** **ο**ú**β**la**ο**—has **Δ**n **β**ra**τ** as subj. In both, **Δ** **ο**ú**β**la**ο** is the "term" of proleptic **ο**e, and is absolute. (c) **ο**e is sometimes analeptic :—**ς**u**ρ**a' m**ο**ro**e** m**υ**m**ν**ti**ρ** na ci**ι**te (UP.)—May the churchyard folk increase by him ! (I.e., may he soon join them !). (d) And sometimes both analeptic and proleptic :—1° **Μ**á no**ς**ta**ν** **φ**ea**ρ** **Δ** **ρ**ú**ν** **ο**á m**η**ao**ι**, **Ι**s **ς**io**ρ**-ra**ο**e **Δ** **ς**ao**ς**al **é**—If a man reveal his secret to his wife, his life is thereby shortened. 2° **ο**á m**β**ea**ο** **ο**o **β**eo **ς**ó**μ** o**ι**rea**ς** **ι**eo' m**α**rb, **β**a **ς**ia**ο**e **ο**o **ς**ao**ς**al **é** (**Δ**es.)—Had you been as straight in life as you are in death, your life would have been all the longer. 3° **Μ**á **β**ai**ν**i**μ**io **ρ**o**μ**nt **ς**á**ι**ri **Δ**i**ς**ti, **Ι**s **φ**ea**ρ**ro**e** **ι** **é**—If we make her laugh a little she's all the better for it.

II.—**Δ**cu :—1° **Κ**α**ο** **é** **ς**in **ο**ú**μ**ne ci**α**'cu 'tá**τ**ar so**κ**ai**ρ** **Δ**i**ρ** nó ná **φ**u**ι**l**τ**ea**ρ** ? (**η**. 315)—What is it to us whether they have decided on it or not ? In this type of sentence a direct rel. is used with the affirmative verb, and the neg. rel. with the second verb. This is due to sentences where the rel. had a true modal meaning. E.g., **ν**i

féadtar cial'cu d'eimeann sé é nó ná d'eimeann—(I don't know whether he does it or not) is due to—Cial'cu mar seo nó mar siú d'eimeann sé é—where the subj. is—An cuma n-a d'eimeann sé é (the way in which he does it). In sentence 1° above, neither 'tátar nor fuittear involves any real relative meaning. 2° pé 'cu tíoctráð san mar sin nú ná tíoctráð (AR. 12)—whether that should happen or not. 3° pé 'cu bíodar cionntac nú ná rabhadar (AR. 17)—whether they were guilty or not.

III.—Air, leis, uime, cuige, etc.—1° As brat air, so ngeobáð sé a páirt (Mac. 54)—in the hope that he would take his part. 2° níor féadfas don tuairim a tabairt dó, cérb é an bíteamnac—I couldn't guess who the villain was. 3° Is uime céana rug Dia an daor-breac so ar na daoimib, tré cáill a cána do'n céad acair ó'r fásadhar (KTB.)—God passed this judgment of condemnation on mankind, because their first parents broke His Commandment. N.B.—In the I. sentence, there is prep. apposition.

IV.—Amhlao:—When the subject of *is* is omitted with proleptic *amhlao* a pleonastic direct rel. precedes the following vb. If neg. the particle is ná, nac, nár. This rel. does not appear when the subj. of *is* is expressed. The insertion of the rel. is due either :—(a) to modal clauses after *analeptic* *amhlao*.—Is maic liom é gá véanam mar sin, 7 is amhlao a d'eimeann sé é de gnáct—I like him to do it like that, and that's how he usually does it. (b) Or in compensation for the modal rel. always contained in the suppressed subj. Various meanings are expressed by proleptic *amhlao* :—

1° Descriptive :—Is amhlao a bí cruinnigte 'san áit sin rómpa stuag daoine (CMO. 254)—They found there gathered together a crowd.

2° Removal of wrong impression :—Níor dem sé don bogáð ar an gcainnt. Is amhlao a cuir sé i bferóm i níba daingne (CMO. 260)—He did not tone down the words. On the contrary, he insisted on their literal meaning more strictly.

3° The reason :—An amhlao a bis ana-saróbir (Lúc. 46)—Is it because you were very wealthy?

4° Surprise :—*An amlaíò nac eol duit cad iad na cačanna a čagann uair?* (Lúc. 56)—Don't you really know what temptations it causes?

5° Hurt feelings :—*An amlaíò ba čeart do rí teacčt annso lomračta?* (Lúc. 23)—Would you have Royalty come here naked? (Surely not!)

6° Satire :—*An amlaíò ba čeart dom gan bás o'pagaíl nuair ná raib an t-airgead agam?* (Lúc. 41)—I suppose I did wrong to die, not having the dues! (Charon's fee).

7° Indignation :—*An amlaíò a beir-se ar an domne amám a maoróiró go tčáinig sé anall i n-aisge?* (Lúc. 41)—Am I to suppose that you are the only one to boast that he got across (the Styx) free?

8° Contempt :—*An amlaíò a measfaó sib beic ag camnt go tčí go scruaófaó an sioc na carbaíl aguib!* (TBC. 61)—I suppose you mean to keep on talking till the frost hardens your gums!

9° The Result :—*Is amlaíò a oem piastaí oíob istig na corp* (CŌ. 5)—The result was, they turned into worms in his body.

10° The Unexpected :—*Is amlaíò a bí sé fém gá oaraó fém romam* (Lúc. 45)—He actually condemned himself in advance of me. (Unlike the others, who blamed someone else for their own follies).

11° Explanatory :—*Is amlaíò a bí oeamán éigin i seib mnti* (CmŌ. 330)—The reason (of her infirmity) was, she was possessed by a devil.

In Conn. I. "is é an čaoi" often takes the place of "is amlaíò" :—(a) 'Sé an čaoi gur réabaó ruadóš tosaig an berólin orm (SmŌ. 24)—The fact is, the first string of my violin has broken.

(b) *Acč is é an čaoi go tčáinig seirbe na glór siúo* (*Ibid.* 31)—But rather a bitterness crept into the woman's voice.

(c) 'Sé an čaoi gur čacčtuig sé a bean (*Ibid.* 159)—the fact is, he choked his wife.

(d) *Nó, an é an čaoi gur boš doibneas na háite 7 na h-amsire a cróde?* (*Ibid.* 17)—Or, rather did the delightfulness of the place and of the weather affect her heart? In these exx. the following clause is preceded by a conj. So, when "is amlaíò" is used :—1° *An*

amhlaidh go raib an sean-berólin ag seinnt uairé féin san dorcadhas ? (SmB. 7)—Could it be that the old fiddle was playing of itself in the dark ? 2° b'féoir go mb' amhlaidh gur cuir gné brónac na mná bí síos (*sic*) faoi cosg leis (*Ibid.* 17)—Perhaps the fact was that the doleful look of the woman below checked it (the bird's song).

1s amhlaidh, with subj. expressed :—1° 1s amhlaidh mar atá sé, ní féoir teacht suas léi (Lúc. 13)—As a matter of fact you can't reach her. 2° 1s amhlaidh mar atá an sgeal, ní mór dúinn árdán éigin o'fáil (Lúc. 48)—This is how things stand—we must procure some elevation. 3° 1s amhlaidh mar atá an sgeal, ní deaáchtac sa tír seo an sósar do pósad ar béalaib an tsínnis (Bn. 57)—The fact is, it is not lawful in this country for the junior to marry before the senior.

215.—“ Ní misoe a ráo ” (one may well think) is generally, in Munster I., followed by ná (nac, nar) :—1° Ní misoe a ráo ná gur binn an ceol leis ceol na camnte sin (AR. 66)—One may well say that the music of these words was real music to him. 2° Ní misoe a ráo ná go raib an teaspac 7 an móraíl bainte díob 1 sgeart (AR. 84)—One may well say that their wanton pride was lowered completely.

When the final clause is neg. there will be two negatives :—

3° Ní misoe a ráo ná ná raib don fonn orca teacht arís—One may well say they had no desire to come again.

With these uses of ná, cf. the affirmative ná of 1s sentences (247).

216.—Further remarks on proleptic a :—1° In mod. I. its “ term ” is usually absolute. In O.I. a G. in grammatical apposition was common, but this is allowed now, only after a lán, much, many, and a tuille, more, followed by an indefinite G. a lán airgid—a lot of money : a tuille aimsire—more time. But—a lán de'n airgead uo—a lot of that money ; a tuille dem' aimsir-se—more of my time. 2° In—a oiread san aimsire, airgid

(that much time, money) *Δ* anticipates *san* (abs.) and the G. is governed directly by *oireadó*. In *ṽá fáro aimsire*, the G. is governed by *fáro* (*fáro aimsire* being opposed to *fáro síge*). 3° In expressions like—*ṽí sí gá innsint conus mar fuair séadna an sparán*—She was telling how S. had secured the purse—*Δ* is required by I. idiom. *innsint* (being a n.) takes the G., and as the following clause cannot assume a G. form, the relation was expressed clearly by placing the pronominal G. object (*Δ*) before *innsint*. 4° Proleptic *Δ*, thus established, spread to cases where such necessity did not exist. Thus O.I. *a masse in chuirp*—the beauty of the body. But mod. I. does not use both proleptic “*Δ*” and a (definite) G. If *Δ* is used the “term” is absolute; if G. (def.) is used there is no *Δ*:—*maise an cuirp*: *ṽá maise an corp*, etc. 5° The two modes of expression exist side by side but differ in meaning:—*bríḡ an sgéit*—the meaning of the business (in itself); but *Δ bríḡ an sgéat*—the significance of the matter (in reference to other things).

217.—The Demonstrative Pronouns:—

1° *Sin* has its *s*- aspirated sometimes, contrary to phonetic law:—(a) *ṽac śm í rígeaḡt ṽeelsebub 'na ṽá curo* (CMO. 321)—Does not that mean B.'s Kingdom divided in two! (b) *ṽeir sé gurb śm é ṽíreaḡ é*—he says that's just it.

2° *Súo*, *siúo* are often contemptuous:—(a) *ṽí blaíspíro don fear acu súo mo bíad* (CMO. 337)—Not one of those shall taste my food! (b) *'San easonóir Δ tuḡadair súo eile ṽó* (CMO. 222)—In regard to the dishonour those others offered Him.

3° We sometimes find *siúo*, *sin*, *so*, close together:—*Δc ṽ'fanaḡ sé siúo go ṽtí go ṽtéígeaḡ na ṽaome soir Δḡ triall air. ṽí mar sin ṽó so* (CMO. 171)—But the former would wait till people went over to him. Not so with the latter.

(Here *sé siúo* refers to the Baptist, relegated to a distance by the thought of Jesus; *so* refers to Christ who was engrossing their thoughts and *sin* to the Baptist's habit already mentioned).

4° *So* and *súo* are sometimes used to denote the

extreme limits of "the universe of discourse":—(a) *O'fás san í san don cumas aicí ar so ná súo do ráo le n-ulcáib* (TBC. 188)—This left her powerless to say one thing or another to the Ultonians. (b) *Abair-se le feargus, a fiacha, go scuirfar so 7 súo ortá* (TBC. 123)—Do you, Fiacha, tell Fergus that they shall be delayed in both ways (referred to by Fiacha).

5° So, *súo*, *san*, may, like other pronouns, be absolute:—(a) *Má's cun san o'innisint dom a tugao annso mé, ní misoe dom beic as mteact* (TBC. 93)—If I was brought here simply to be told this, I may as well be going. (b) *Is móroe mo mian é clos tusa beic gá ráo san liom* (PSA). *san*, abs.

6° Sometimes governed directly by preps.—(a) *Oar so 7 súo*—By this and by that! (by all the oaths). (b) *Níor deagdas ann ó som*—I never went since. In—*go oí seo*, up to this, the pron. is N.

218.—Interrogative Pronouns:—Cf. Interrog. Adjs. 192-3. The clauses introduced by interrog. prons. may be N.G.D.A., or they may be absolute:—1° **Nom.** (a) **Subj. N. to is**:—*Is eol daoib conus mar a cuir sé comact bur namad ar neamnío ar bur son*—You know how that, for your sakes, He annihilated the power of your enemies. (The interrog. in *conus* is an adj. But see 220). *Is cuma cad déarfair*—It matters not what you say.

(b) **Pred. N. to is**:—*Sé ruo is mó atá as déanam buarta dom, ná cia rağaró as triall air*—What's worrying me most is, just who will go to him.

(c) **Appositional N.**—*Tá sé socair aige ceana féin cad a déanfaró sé*—He has already decided on his course of action.

(d) **Virtual N.**—*Bí iongna orainn cad cuige an t-uisge go léir* (CMO. 112)—We wondered what all the water was for.

2° **Genitive**:—(a) *1 otaob cad tá le déanam agaimn* (CMO. 124)—as to what we have to do. (b) *1 otaob cé bí ann* (CMO. 155)—as to who it was. (c) *1 otaob cé ró gur ceart dó an riğeact a tabairt* (bñ. 254)—as to whom he should give the Kingdom.

3° **Dative**:—(a) *Ar cad cuige ró beic as déanam ar*

cur-tré-céile go léir (CMO. 99)—as to why he was causing all this confusion. (b) ar cad é an saḡas an beannú san (CMO. 21)—what manner of salutation this was. (c) táim bog ar cad a measann daoine eile (TBC. 163)—my mind is easy as to other people's opinions.

4° **Accusative** :—(a) Dubairt sé leo : “Cad cuige go rabádair ar mo lorg ?” (CMO. 72)—He said to them :—“Why did ye seek Me?” (b) Innis dúinn cé bí ann—Tell us who was there. (c) níor cuigeadar cé bí acu (CMO. 305)—They knew not whom they had to deal with.

5° **Absolute** :—(a) ḡá fiafruide de cá dtiocfaod na huile go léir (CMO. 358)—Asking Him whence all the evils should come. (b) Tá 'fios agam cé hé tu (CMO. 155)—I know who you are. (c) ar mísde leat a d'innis dom cé hé tu ? (bn. 573)—Would you mind telling me who you are ?

219 (a).—Ro is used by analogy with ba in interrog. sentences like—Ciarb iad na h-uaisle iasacta ? (CMO. 57)—Who were the foreign nobles ? This is due to questions containing an oblique rel.—Cárb' as iad, 7 cérb' iad féin (CMO. 57)—Where they were from, and who they were. Cf. ciar' díob tu ? = cia (níad an muinntir) ar' díob tu ?—Who are the people from whom you are sprung ? (b) The pres. tense of is is often used, though dependent on past.—ní dubairt sé cad é an saḡas é—He didn't say what sort it was. But the past occurs also :—Cad ab' iad na fiolair (CMO. 356)—What did the eagles signify ? (c) Instead of cia'cu, we find cad é acu :—Cad é an gníom póḡanta acu go measann sib ḡabáil de clocaib ionnam mar ḡeall air ? (CMO. 333)—Because of which of these good works do ye think of stoning Me ?

220 (a).—Exclamatory “How !”—1° Cad é mar is deacair do luēt saróbris dul isteach i ríḡeact Dé ! (CMO. 363)—How difficult it is for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God ! 2° Cad a bfuil de d'aoimib do meallad ! (Im. 20)—How many have been deceived !

(b) **Conus**, and **conus mar** :—The interrog. in conus (cionnus) is an adj., but we may note here the difference

between *conus* (modal) and *conus mar* (non-modal) :—
 1° *Úi mínigte go soilléir aige conus ba ceart an dlíge do cimeádo san t-úil ar neamhó (CMO. 209)*—He had explained clearly how one should prevent the neutralization of the Law (modal). 2° *Conus mar a bí ag éirge leo san obair a tug sé le déanam dóib (CMO. 254)*—how that they had succeeded in the work He had given them to do. (non-modal).

221.—Indefinite Pronouns :—*Don* is sometimes used pronominally :—1° *Ní crerofinn-se ó don na c n-éireochar éamonn slán (CCU. 25)*—I shouldn't have believed from anyone but that *é*. would have survived. 2° *San don acu ag éirge slán (Ibid.)*. 3° *Is don mise 7 an t-athair (CMO. 333)*—The Father and I are one. 4° *Bríspir don de slíocht na mná so do ceann (CMO. 3)*—One of this Woman's offspring shall crush thy head. 5° *Don dem' cáirdeib síde is ead é (TBC. 149)*—He's one of my "supernatural" friends. 6° *Agus beró fíor ag na Seintib go bfuil i n-Israel don a dmeann slánú 7 fuasgaíl (BH. 732)*—And the Gentiles shall know that there is One in Israel who heals and redeems.

222.—The Suffixed Pronouns :—

1° When two prep. pronouns come together one or both may dispense with the emphatic particle :—*Ní raib dume de ríogra ulaó ná raib fuat 7 miosgais aige riám do Connactaib, 7 acu dó (TBC. 14-15)*—Not one of the Ulster princes but had always thoroughly detested the Connaught men, and they him. So, when a prep. pron. is added to a verb, and denotes a different person :—*Fé mar ba maic lib a déanfaó daoine lib, demró-se leo*—Do unto others as you would have others do unto you.

2° A prep. pron. is often used where Eng. has G. or N. :—(a) Instead of G.—*Ba maic leis go sgarfaó anam le colamn aige (Im. 20)*—He would like his soul to separate from his body ; *Do bris ar an bpoirne acu (S. 226)*—Their patience became exhausted ; *Do nearcuig sé amhianta acu (Ser. 179)*—It strengthened their passions ; *Is fíor-déisgíobuile agam sib fearoa (CS. 249)*—Henceforth ye are My true disciples.

(b) Instead of N.—1° *An fáir is beo ar an saogal so* (Im. 21)—As long as he is alive in this world. 2° *Do dubaig 7 do gormaig aige* (S. 73)—He became black and blue. 3° *Nuair a gabann don rud beag 'n-ar scoinnib, tuiteann an lúg ar an lág againn* (Im. 17)—When some trifle goes against us, we collapse utterly.

223.—Relative Pronouns :—

I.—We sometimes find the rel. in the A. of Extent in Degree :—(a) *Is maic léi fíos a beic aic 1 scearc, cao é an líon a táinig sac rí-fémne* (TBC. 36)—She likes to know exactly with what force each warrior-king has come. (b) *Dein airneas ar an líon a cuadar tarainn soir* (TBC. 63)—Calculate the number (to the extent of) which they have passed us eastwards. (c) *Pé méir a beró tú caillte leis, tabrfao-sa duit é, nuair a beró mé as teact ear n-aís* (CMO. 318)—Whatever you have lost by him, I shall repay you on my return.

II.—The direct relatives are used for the oblique :—
A.—In temporal clauses. B.—In modal clauses. C.—In Complex Elliptical Sentences. D.—In a somewhat rare construction.

A.—1° *Cá raib an t-airgead an fáir a bíos as cuardac?* (S. 40)—where was the money while I was searching? (Or the rel. might here be taken as A. of Extent in Time). 2° *Ón lá úr a gab sé ar an mór seisear* (S. 38)—since the day he whipped the seven men. 3° *An méir aimsire a bí an t-airgead as do seib* (S.)—all the time the money was out of your possession. (Cf. 1°). Sometimes, however, we find the oblique rel.—(a) *Um an taca go raib a macnamh críocnuigte* (S. 62)—by the time he had finished his reflections. (b) *1 scaiteam na n-aimsire 'n-a raib an cat ar siubal* (Mac. 157)—all the time that the battle was in progress. So, often, in Conn. I.—(c) *Tráit a mbíod an tsaoire beag aige* (SmB. 129)—while he had a little leisure. (d) *An céad uair eile a táinig peadar isteach cúicí* (SmB. 141)—the next time P. came in to her.

Sometimes we find both direct and oblique forms in one sentence :—1° *Ón lá a tanaig annso 7 gur taraisead*

as an leitim mé (Eis. 88)—From the day I came here and was pulled out of the porridge (Or, *sur* may be explained as a conj., with ellipsis, before it, of — *γ* *Δ* *ráinīs*). 2° Nuair a táinig an t-am 'n-ar mictro do t-*Δ* *Ó Ceallaigh*. . . . (n. 24)—when the proper time came for T. O'C. to

B.—1° Do h-innseá *conus* ab' éigin niam do tógaint as an obair sin (n. 245)—He was told how N. had to be removed from this “job.” 2° B'i iongha *Δ* *scroíde* *orta* *Δ* *feabhas* *Δ* *deineadar* an *gnó* (S. 183)—They wondered much at how well they did the thing. 3° b'féoir *sur* *deine-de* *Δ* *deanfar* an *surde*, an *teacht-airéact* do cur *tímceall* uait-se (n. 225)—Perhaps they will pray all the harder if the message is sent round from you. 4° Is fearr is eol *duitse* é ná mar is eol *doimne eile* é—You know it better than anyone else. (The clause—*is eol duitse é* is modal, with *rel. Δ* understood). 5° But when the compar. clause is itself relative, the following *rel.* clause ceases to be modal, and so the oblique *rel.* is used if the sense requires and allows it :— (a) Níl *doimne* is fearr *surb eol do* san, ná mar *dob eol duitse é* (TBC. 1)—No one knows better than you did. (In 4° above the subj. of the 1st *is* is the modal clause—*is eol duitse é*. In 5° (a) the subj. of the 1st *is* is *rel. Δ* understood, and “*surb eol do san*” is connected not with *is fearr* but with *doimne*) (Double *Rel.* Construction, see 223, IV.), and the sense requires the oblique *rel.*—“to whom that is known”). (b) Tá *n-easnamh fós air an n-ó* is mó *n-Δ* *bfuil gá* *Δ* *aise leis* (Im. 85)—He is still without the thing he needs most.

The sense does not allow the oblique *rel.* when the *D.* relation appears *before* the compar. (or superl.) clause. With 5° (a) cf.—*is do* san is fearr is eol *conus é* *deanamh*—he knows best how to do it. With 5° (b) cf.—*is le n-airgead* is mó *atá gá* *Δ* *anois aise*—it's money he needs most now.—This is because the last two sentences are complex elliptical forms, in which, according to 223, II. C., the direct *rel.* must be used for the oblique. 6° On the other hand, in sentences beginning with *cia*, *cao*, followed by a prep. pron. or prep. phrase, before the compar. (or superl.) clause, we have not complex

elliptical forms, but merely a transference of the prep. from its logical place in the sentence. Hence an oblique rel. may appear in the clause following the compar. or superl. clause :—1° *féadaint cía aise doob' fearr n-a mbeaó an t-ollmúcán déanta* (n. 180)—to see who would have made the best preparation. 2° *féadaint cía aise (ba túisge) n-a mbeaó an fosaíóeact fóganta* (bn. 21)—to see which should (soonest) have the rich pasturage. With these two cf.—*is aiamsa is fearr a beaó an t-ollmúcán déanta*—It is I who would have made the best preparation; *is aatsa is túisge a beaó an fosaíóeact fóganta*—it is you who would have first secured the rich pasturage.—These are complex elliptical sentences, and therefore have the direct rel. (C. below).

C.—1° *ní oe a déanfi rí-ollam*—not he should be made Chief Bard. This=*ní né* (the person already mentioned) *an té go ndéanfi rí-ollam oe*. Here the prep. *oe*, which necessitates the obl. rel. (*go*) is in the subj. But in the complex elliptical form *oe* is transferred to the pred. and so the direct rel. must appear in the subj. 2° *Óir is dóic leo gur as méro a gcaimnte do n-éistfar leo* (CS. 14)—For they think that in their much speaking they may be heard. This=*gurb é méro a gcaimnte an níó as a n-éistfar leo*. See remark after 1° above.

D.—1° *Cao é an ruo a bí bhrúadar ar aigne a déanam?*—What did B. intend to do? *b.* is subj. to *bí*, and we might have expected an obl. rel. The anomaly is due to analogy. *Cao é an ruo a bí as b. ar aigne a déanam*, would be quite normal. So would—*bí b. ar aigne an ruo san a déanam*. We may look upon 1° as a *contamination* of these two (309).

2° *Sin mar a leanfaimís gan contaóairt an bótar atá tosnuigte ainn ar gabáil* (Im. 156)—Thus shall we safely keep to the road we have begun to travel.—Here the rel. may be A. of Extent in Space, after *gabáil*. Cf.—*as gabáil siar an bótar a bíos*—I was going along the road westwards.

III (a).—The obl. rel. *aⁿ*, *ar^c* is used in Munster :—

1° Immediately after a prep.—*Dó meas na daoine gur é Íosa an fear le n-a raib súil as na lúdaí* (CMO. 256)—The people thought that Jesus was the Prophet for whom the Jews hoped. 2° After *sul*, *sar*—before, lest.—*sul a mbeinn déiréanac* (S.)—lest I should be late. 3° In such sentences as :—*Ciar' díob tu?*—What's your surname?

(b) In U. and Conn. I. this is the chief obl. rel. in use :—1° *Cé as a dtáinig sé* (SmB. 12)—whence it came. Sometimes *go*, *gur* :—*cé'n ádai go bfuair mé bás* (SmB. 81)—how I died.

IV. **Double Relative Construction** :—(a) When we say—*Is dóic liom gur scríob duine éigin leictir*—I think someone wrote a letter—the clause *gur . . .* is subj. of *is*. But when *is* becomes rel. this construction must be dropped. *Cia is dóic leat do scríob an leictir?*—Who do you think wrote the letter? Here *is* has already its subj. in rel. *a* (understood), and the following clause cannot be conjunctive (in connection with *is*), but must be relative (in connection with the antecedent of rel.). (b) So—*Dubairt sé go ndéanfaó sé é*—He said he would do it. Here the *go*-clause is object of *dubairt*. But when we say—*Cao é an rud adubairt sé a ndéanfaó sé?* the object of the vb. is now rel. *a*, and the following clause must be relative (in connection with *rud*), not conjunctive (in connection with *dubairt*). (c) Again, if we wish to say, in I.—He is still without the thing he needs most—there being no superl. (or compar.) adverb in mod. I.—we must have recourse to Double Relative Construction : *Tá m-easnamh fós air an níó*—1° (*a*) *is mó*—2° *n-a bfuil gáó aige leis*.

The two conditions required for Double (or Multiple) Relative Construction are :—1° Co-ordination in construction—the relatives must have the same antecedent. 2° Subordination in meaning—each rel. clause must limit the meaning of the other (or others). The following combinations occur :—

1° Both relatives N.—(a) *Ac ní hé an gluaisceán is mó bí as cur air* (SmB. 113)—But it wasn't the motor that worried him most. (b) *Níl domne is fearr a dtáinig*

as ná mise (TBC. 6)—No one escaped better than I did.
(c) Oeim-se anois an ruo is dóic leat is fearr (Lúc. 49)—
Do you now what you think is best.

2° First Rel. N., second A.—(a) Cao ba máit leat a
véanfaínn tuit (CMO. 367)—What would you have me
do for you? (b) Iarr orm an nío is máit leat a tábairfaínn
duit (bñ. 477)—Ask me what you wish me to give you.

3° First Rel. A., second N.—(a) b'sin é síl Antome
bí uirri (SmB. 26)—That was what A. thought was wrong
with her. (b) A lán scéalairéadta i rtaob neite doir-
tear a tuit amac (CMO. 66)—many stories concerning
things which they say happened. (If doirtear is passive
both relatives are N.).

4° Both A.—(a) An ruo a meas sé doirfaróis (CMO.
177)—What he thought they'd say. (b) Sin obair nár
measas a véanfi orainn (TBC. 71)—That's a thing I
didn't think would be done to us. (Véanfi, Autonomous).

5° First Rel. N., second D.—níl domne is fearr surb
eol dó san ná mar tob' eol duitse é (TBC. 1)—No one
knows that better than you did.

6° First Rel. N., second temporal D.—An fáro ba
dóic leis a bí domne de slíocht na Macabéac beo (CMO.
9)—As long as he thought any descendant of the M.
was alive.

7° First Rel. N., second direct for oblique in complex
elliptical clause :—Ar cátair Ierúsalem is ead is fearr
a bí an cáoi aige ar an rtréit sin a o'oiriú—It was on
the city of J. he had the best opportunity of putting this
trait (aesthetic taste) in practice. This is the complex
elliptical form of—Is í cátair 1. an áit is fearr n-a raib
an cáoi aige ar an rtréit sin a o'oiriú air.

8° First rel. A., second direct for oblique (local D.)
in complex elliptical clause :—I mBetlenem doubairt
na tarraireadtaí a béarfi an Slánuigteoir (CMO. 40)—
It was in B. the prophecies said the S. would be born.=
Is í B. an áit doubairt na mbéarfi. . . . When in
is transferred to the pred. it is omitted in the subj.,
which therefore has the direct rel. for the oblique :—
(1s) I mB. doubairt a béarfi. . . .

9° First rel. N. or A., second, G.—Tá tarraite
orm buairt nár measas riam surb féoir a leicéir do

teacht ar mnáoi (TBC. 133)—A worry has come upon me, the like of which I never thought could fall upon a woman. N.B.—If *nár* be understood as a conj. (as it may be—*buairt* “*cóm mór san*” *nár*) then *sur* will be a conj. also.

10° First rel. local D. second the same :—*'Sa n-áit 'n-ar dóic le Críostairde sur ceart an altóir a beit* (CMO. 146)—where a Christian would think the altar ought to be.—The two clauses logically involved are :—
(a) *'Sa n-áit* (a) *ba dóic le C.* (b) *'Sa n-áit n-ar ceart* . . .
When the oblique rel. of (b) is transferred to (a), the direct rel. of (a) is usually transferred to (b), giving—
'Sa n-áit n-ar dóic le C. ba ceart (with direct rel. *a* understood before *ba*). But *sur* may be a conj. Thus—
ba dóic le C. sur *ann*, is made rel. by transferring the prep. in *ann* to the rel. *ar*.—*'Sa n-áit n-ar dóic*
sur ceart

11. First rel. D., second N. (by “Inversion,”—see preceding ex.)—*Ói sac doimne as breitniú na h-aimsire n-ar dóic leo a beaó an t-áró-Rí as teacht a baile* (N. 210)—Everyone was looking forward to the time when they thought the High-King would be coming home.—The two clauses involved are :—(a) *na h-aimsire* (a) *ba dóic leo* (Rel. N.) and (b) *na h-aimsire 'n-a mbeaó* (Rel. D.). But the direct and oblique forms are transposed. This “Inversion” is quite common. See next ex.

12° First rel. neg. loc. D., second direct (By “Inversion,” for A.—local D.).—*Cao é a mnicige a fuaras é san áit nár measas a geobaimn é* (Im. 187)—How often have I found it where I never expected to find it ! The clauses involved are :—(a) *sa n-áit nár measas* (Rel. neg. A.) ; (b) *sa n-áit n-a bfuigimn é* (Rel. loc. D.). Inversion has taken place. But, as *nár* may be either direct or oblique, the 1st clause remains as it was, the change being apparent only in the 2nd clause.

13° First rel. temporal D., second, the same (Direct for oblique in both) :—(a) *Nuair is dóic leo a bío as molaó a céile, is as cámeaó a céile a bío*—When they think they are praising each other, it is just then they are finding fault.—The stress is on the point of time. If it were on the contrast between what they are actually

doing, and what they imagine they are doing, it would run thus :—(b) *is as cáinead a céile a bío siad, nuair is dóic leo go mbíod siad as molaod a céile* (Im. 206)—It's blaming each other they are, when, as they think, they are praising each other !

14° Both clauses modal (Direct for oblique in both):—

(a) *Ní duhdairt sé na focail lom díreac mar a ceastuig uada a déanfaod sé* (CMO. 333)—He didn't say the words precisely as they wanted. (b) *Bí cneasta leis, fé mar ba maic leat a beirí leat féin* (Im. 22)—Be gentle with him, as you would like to be treated yourself. (c) *Deimrò go léir díreac mar a cífrò sib a déanfaod-sa* (bn. 278)—Do ye all exactly as ye shall see me do. (d) *Čosnuig neite ar ceact cun cinn fé mar a meas Seleucas a čioc-parois* (bn. 757)—Things began to come to a head, as S. thought they would. These exx. (14°) show the "spread" of Double Rel. Construction, and there is something abnormal in each. In (a) *ceastuig* has no grammatical subj. In (b) *ba* has no grammatical subj. In (c) *cífrò* has no grammatical obj. Nor in (d) has *meas*.

V. Multiple Rel. Sentences :—

1° *Deirim leat gurb é seo an cuma aduhdairt sé ba dóic leis ab' fearr a čaitnfead le cáč*—I tell you that this is the way he said he thought would best please everyone. Four rel. clauses, co-ordinate in construction, and subordinate in meaning :—(a) *an cuma aduhdairt sé* (Rel. A.) ; (b) *an cuma ba dóic leis* (Rel. N.) ; (c) *an cuma ab' fearr* (Rel. N.) ; (d) *an cuma a čaitnfead* (Rel. N.).

2° *Cia hé is dóic leat aduhdairt sé do measadur ab' fearr a déanfaod an gníom?*—Who think you did he say they thought would be the best to do the deed? Five co-ordinate clauses, each, however, qualified in meaning by the others :—(a) *an té (a) is dóic leat*. (b) *an té aduhdairt sé*. (c) *an té do measadur*. (d) *an té ab' fearr*. (e) *an té a déanfaod*.

VI. Negative Relatives :—

(a) *ná* is used in Munster, outside the past tense, with all verbs, except *is*. In U. and Conn. *nac* is usual.

(b) *nac*, everywhere, as direct and obl. rel. with *is* (outside past tense).

(c) *nár*, with past and condit. of *is*, and the past of other verbs [except those in which *ro* combines with the vb. itself (*raib*), and verbs which do not take *ro*—(*ruair*)].

VII. The Relative in Compar. and Superl. Clauses :—

(a) *Níl domne is fearr surb eol dó é ná mar is eol tuit-se é*—No one knows it better than you do.

(b) *Sm é an rud is fearr atá ar eolas aige*—That's what he knows best.

(c) Note that the I. for "that is the best thing he knows" is :—*Sm é an rud is fearr dá bfuil ar eolas aige*.

VIII. Interrogative and Relative :—Contrast—1° *Cao cuige go ndubairt sí ná raib don maic innti?* 2° *Cao cuige adubairt sí ná raib don maic innti?* 1° is a single rel. question—why did she say she was no good? 2° is a double rel. question—what was it that she said she was no good at?

Similarly :—(a) *Catoin adubairt sé go ndéanfaó sé é?* (b) *Catoin adubairt sé a déanfaó sé é?* (a) is a single rel. question—when did he make the statement that he would do it? (b) is a double rel. question—when, did he say, he would do it? (referring to the time of the doing, not of the statement).

IX. The Compound Relative :—The following combinations occur :—

A.—Both antecedent and rel. N.—*Bí gac ar cóir 7 ar cuibe a déanam dóib déanta aige dóib* (CMO. 137)—He had done for them everything it was right and fitting to do for them=*gac níó (a) ba cóir*. Anteced. N. to *bí*; rel. N. to *ba*.

B.—Both anteced. and rel. A.—*Déanfaó a ndéarfair tiam a déanam*—I'll do everything you tell me. Anteced. A. after *déanfaó*; rel. A. governed by *déarfair*.

C.—Anteced. A., Rel. N.—*agus gac a mbameaó do leigistí ias* (CMO. 258)—and all who touched (the hem of His cloak) were healed.—Anteced.—Projected A. (N. if *leigistí* is passive); rel. N. to *bameaó*.

D.—Anteced. N., rel. A.—*Ṫóḡḡar uair̃ ḡac̃ a measann sé atá aige*—All he thinks he has shall be taken from him.—Anteced.—N. to *Ṫóḡḡar* (if passive); rel. A. governed by *measann*. There is Double Rel. Construction here. If the 2nd clause were alone it would be—*ḡac̃ a bpuil aige*.

E.—Anteced. D., Rel. N.—*Ḑer̃o leagaint sios ar šeomíní, 'Sa maireann de n-a bpór (ṙc̃. 31)*—Shoneens and all survivors of their seed shall be put down! Anteced. D. (or A.) gov. by *ar*. Rel. N. to *maireann*.

F.—Anteced. D., Rel. A.—*Ṫá roict̃a acu linn as ar ðeimead̃ar o' éascóir riam̃ oraim̃* (TBC. 146)—They have paid us for all the wrongs they ever did us.—Anteced. D. gov. by *as*. Rel. A. gov. by *ðeimead̃ar*.

G.—Both Anteced. and Rel. D.—1° *m̃arbuig̃dar an uile ruõ i bpuirm̃ ðume de stioct̃ ḡaeðeal ðár f̃eadõdar teact̃ suas leis* (Sḡ. 54)—They slew everything in the shape of human Irishman they could reach. Anteced. D. gov. by *de*; rel. D. (A) gov. by *le* (in *leis*). 2° *ḡráðmar̃ tar ḡac̃ ñíð ðár t̃us ðume ḡráð ðó riam̃ r̃ós* (Im. 248)—Loveable beyond anything man ever yet loved.—Anteced. D. gov. by *de*; Rel. D. gov. by *ro*. 3° *Ṫáimis̃ amac̃ as an loč an capall̃ ðob' áilne ðár leog̃as mo súil riam̃ air̃* (Ḑr. 33)—There came out of the lake the most beautiful horse I ever laid eyes on.—Anteced. D. gov. by *de*; Rel. D. (A.) gov. by *ar*. 4° *m̃á c̃aiteann tu ḡac̃ dõbent̃ ðá b̃f̃ag̃ar ar an saog̃al so tu*—If you spend every Advent during which you're left in this world Anteced. D. gov. by *de*. Rel. oblique temporal D. (or A. of Extent in Time).

For fuller consideration of these exx. see 310.

H.—Anteced. G., Rel. N. (A.).—*Ac̃ b̃i uaisle ar na Samarat̃ánaig̃ m̃-éag̃mais ar marbuig̃eadõ* (Mac. 274)—But there were others amongst the S. besides those who were slain. Anteced. G. gov. by *éag̃mais*. Rel. N. (or A. if *marbuig̃eadõ* is Auton.).

I.—Anteced. N., Rel. G.—*Sim̃ a bpuil̃ f̃ios ag̃am* (Ḑn. 454)—That's all I know.

J.—Anteced. absolute; Rel. N. or A.—*ñi f̃eadõar an f̃earr̃oe iad̃ ar t̃ug̃as ðóib̃* (S.)—I wonder are they improved by my gifts.

CHAPTER V.

SYNTAX OF THE VERB.

The Copula.

224.—*is* is merely a logical copula, and forms no part of the predicate. *E.g.*—1° It must never be stressed. If it were a real predicate it would be stressed, when emphatic, like all other verbs (which are real predicates or part-predicates). 2° One cannot answer a question with *is* alone, although one can with practically every other verb. Why? Because *is* by itself conveys no information—is not a predicate. Since it is never stressed, and is not a predicate, it is used to introduce the predicate. This gives us the rule for all (or nearly all) *is* sentences :—(a) VS. (Verb-Subj.) must always be avoided. (b) VP (p) (Verb-Pred.) must always be secured. (When the vb. is expressed. If *is* is often omitted). N.B.—P (p). P=the real pred. p=one of the prons.—*é, í, ιαυ, εαυ*, used to take its place. The real pred. is often too long, or too cumbrous, to come immediately after *is*, in which case one of these prons. takes its place. Or P. is placed elsewhere, to secure some special shade of meaning, and in this case also p. must take its place. The rule may be put, graphically, thus :—(a) —VS. (b) +VP (p). The rule does *not* say :—1° That we must begin with the vb. That is not necessary and is often impossible. 2° That P., the real pred. must come immediately after *is*. That is not necessary, either, and is often impossible. 3° That the subj. must come last. Unnecessary, also, and often impossible. The rule, in fact, says nothing about the position of the subj. except negatively; nor of P., except that, *if* it does not follow *is* immediately, then “p” must take its place.

225 (a). Subj. and Pred.—The grammatical subj. is the word, or group of words, pointing out the person, place, name, thing or group, about which the assertion (or denial) is made, or the question asked. The grammatical pred. is the word, or group of words, pointing out what is affirmed, denied, or queried about what the subj. denotes.

(b) Any word or group capable of being subj. or pred. is called a "term." The pred. is either definite or indefinite. A pred. is definite when it is an individual term; indefinite, when it is a general term.

(c) An individual term is one which can be asserted, in the same sense, of only one person, place or thing, or one group,—*Séadna*, an peann so—*Séadna*, this pen. A general term is one which may be applied, in the same sense, to each of an indefinite number of persons, places, things, names or groups :—*duine*, *páirc*, *bóro*, *pádraig* (see 261) *sgata*—person, field, table, Patrick, company.

226.—This gives us the division of 1s sentences into—
A.—Classification (pred. indefinite). B.—Identification (pred. definite). In C.—Complex Elliptical sentences, the pred. is either def. or indef. (so that this class is a sub-division of A. and B.).

A.—**Classification Sentences** :—Type I.—The pred. is a common noun. The subj. may be a noun, pron., phrase or clause :—

1° *1s oncú do Connaictaib an cú, 1s mí-clú do Connaictaib a clú* (TBC. 96)—The "Hound" (Cúchulainn) is a wolf to Connaught-men, his fame, to them, is ill-fame. 2° *1s bean san eagla mise* (TBC, 3)—I am a fearless woman, *san eagla* narrows down the meaning of *bean*, but not completely. It remains a general term. 3° *Ní fios conus oirprea do congnam dúinn* (TBC. 15)—There's no knowing how your help might suit us. The subj. here is the complex noun—*conus dúinn*.

227.—Type II.—The pred. is an adj. (equivalent to a common noun) :—1° *1s buan san sgar sul na sgarite* (CCu. 19)—The moaning of the wind continues un-

ceasingly. 2° 1s mīnīc sáoī ó óáoī (UP.)—Often a clown's son is a sage. 3° 1s fearr fuigeall an máthar ná fuigeall an mágaró—Better the leavings of the dog than those of the cynic! 4° 1s fearr leat ná meit—"Half a loaf is better than no bread."

228.—Type III.—The pred. is an adj. but the subj. involves a rel. clause :—1° 1s trom an t-uallac ámeolas (UP.)—Ignorance is a heavy burden, Subj. an t-uallac (a 1s) ámeolas, 2° 1s maic an saogal é—má máireann sé i b'fao—The times are good—if they last long, (Said to foolish young people), Subj.—an saogal (a 1s) é. 3° 1s cruair an áinnit i sin (CMO, 260)—These are hard words, Subj. an áinnit (a 1s) i sin. 4° ní maic an tuic faine sib (bn. 407)—You are but indifferent guards. Subj. an tuic faine (a 1s) sib.

229.—Type IV.—The pred. appears to be a proper n. but is really a general term :—1° Agus (1s) Éamonn a áthair (S. 20)—And his father is "an E." also. 2° 1s "Connla" a bíoró ag niam aír—N. called him "Connla." Subj. of 1s :—an ainm a bíoró ag n. aír. The sentence is nominal. 3° Dubhairt sé guró asarías ab ainm ró (bn. 574)—He said his name was A.

230.—Type V.—The pred. is a prep. pron., or prep. phrase.—1° 1s róic liom go raib sí ingráó leis go mór camall (TBC. 5)—I think she was very much in love with him for a while.—The pred. róic liom=a thing likely in my opinion. 2° Ac ní creideann sib-se, mar ní dem' áoire-se sib (CMO. 333)—But you do not believe, for you are not of My Flock.

231.—Emphatic Forms :—Type VI.—1° Créao mtiúte amúda ab ead íad (CMO. 245)—They were a strayed flock. 2° Uaigneas san áitreab is ead an áit seo (CMO. 255)—This place is a homeless desert. 3° Rógaire fill ab ead é (bn. 807)—He was a treacherous rogue. 4° longna saogail ab ead an leact san (bn. 826)—This monument was a world's wonder. N.B.—(a) The predicates here are very strong, and call for an emphatic

position. (b) The pron. *eað* must be inserted after the vb. in order to avoid "VS."

232.—Type VII.—Emphatic form of II. 1° *Olc* is *eað an peacað*—Sin is an evil. Type III has no more emphatic form. The adj. pred. there is already very strongly emphasized.

233.—Type VIII.—Emphatic form of Type IV. 1° *Alba* is *eað is ainm do'n cric sin*—A. is the name of that country. 2° *Finnbeannað* is *eað is ainm do*—Whitehorn is his name (English often begins with the logical predicate).

234.—Type IX.—Emphatic form of Type V.—*Uinn-ne ab eað an réro* (MSp.)—The moor belonged to us. N.B.—Some exx. of Type V are not emphasized by means of *eað* and the projected predicate. E.g.—*Is é is doic liom go raib sí i ngráð leis . . .* is stronger than **230**, 1°, but is an Identification sentence of the Type VpSP. (246).

235.—Type X.—*Cailín gur ainm oí Site na mblát*—A girl named G. na mB. It has been said that *Site na mB.* (the grammatical subj.) is the logical pred., and that *ainm oí* (the grammatical pred.) is the logical subj. This is wrong. If we wish to make *Site na mB.* pred. we have two ways of doing so :—(a) *Cailín gur Site na mB. ab ainm oí.* (b) *Cailín gur é ainm bí uircti Site na mB.*

236.—Type XI.—In the last ex. in **235** the pred. remains indefinite. It means "a name spelled—*Site*," etc. Such sentences must be distinguished from Type II b, Identification (247). The particle *na*, which precedes the pred. there, has found its way into the present Type also :—1° *Is é ruo a bí aige ná céao oet noeic a cúig de míltib corp* (Bn. 569)—He found himself with only 185,000 corpses ! 2° *Is é ainm a bí air ná Séana* (S. 6)—His name was S. 3° *Is é céadchrann tarla dhó soileach mhór* (BK. 1)—The first tree he met was a large willow.

237.—Type XII.—*Ód mba ná beaó sé faḡáitḡa roim ré aise* (S. 67)—if he had not got it beforehand. Usually explained by saying that the pred. *ruo*=a fact, is understood. It is more satisfactory to take *na . . . aise* as pred. with subj. understood at the end (*é*=the state of affairs in question).

238.—Type XIII.—SVP.—The subj. is a rel. and must come first. *1° Níl doimne is fearr a táinig as ná mise* (TBC. 6)—No one has come out of it better than I. The subj. (rel. *a*) is understood before *is*. There is Double Rel. Construction (223, IV).

239.—Type XIV.—A long pred. is often divided, the fundamental noun coming first, then VpS+the remainder of pred. This we may call "The Split Predicate". *1° Fír ab' eaó iad ná leogfaó a scroíóe ná a n-aise oóib' fanamaint sa baile*—They were men whose hearts or minds would not allow them to stay at home. *2°* This is usual, also, when the pred., though short, contains a rel.—*Bean is eaó i ná fuil pumn céille aicí*—She's a woman of but little sense. Conn. I. sometimes does not avail of this order:—*Bean nár tug sé don áirí uirrí ariam b'eaó i siúro* (SmB. 184)—Instead of *Bean ab' eaó i siúro nár . . .*

240.—Type XV.—SVPs.—The subj. is projected for emphasis, and a pron. (*s*) takes its place at the end:—*1° An teagdas so a tugaim-se, ní liom é* (CS. 245)—This doctrine which I give is not Mine (Much better than—*Ní liom . . .*). *2° Óir an áit na bfuilir do' seasam, is talam naomta é* (bn. II. 1)—For the place where thou standest is holy ground.

241.—Type XVI.—SPVps.—*Na sgéalta beaḡa san a o'innseáó íosa, neite ab' eaó iad a tuit amac* (CMO. 318)—These little stories which J. told were things that had happened. This is much neater than—*neite ro tuit amac ab' eaó na sgéalta. . .* Note the split predicate (239).

242.—Type XVII.—PS. The verb is omitted :—
 1° *násaret ainm an báile sin* (CMO. 17)—The name of this village was N. 2° *muire ab' ainm dí* (CMO. 331)—Her name was M. 3° *faða céir teist an omis* (AOR. 210)—Far fares the fame of generosity. 4° *Tríú a gníreas treabha* (UP.)—It is rivalry that makes good ploughing (*Tríú*=M. *tnút*).

243.—Type XVIII.—SP.—*An cuairt is fearr cuairt gearr* (UP.)—The best visit is a short one. Another way of saying *cuairt gearr* (*is ea*) *an cuairt is fearr*.

244.—Type XIX.—PS.—*Cao é an donas é seo atá ar siúbal?* (TBC. 157)—What's all this mischief that's going on? *Cao* is pred. N. to *is*. *É* is proleptic subj. (s), the real subj. being *an donas* (*a is*) *é seo*, etc.

B.—Identification Sentences :—

245.—Type I.—VpPS.—1° *is é leigeas na loðar is mó cuireadh iongha 7 alltacht ar gac doimne* (CMO. 162)—It was the curing of the lepers that most amazed everyone. 2° *is é briathar Dé an síol* (CMO. 232)—The seed is the Word of God. 3° *'Sí an dias is truime is iste cromas a ceann* (UP.)—The heaviest ear most lowly bends its head (A commendation of Humility). 4° *'Sé an t-éadaic a gní an t-óime* (UP.)—Clothes make the man.

246.—Type II. a.—VpSP.—Two reasons for the evolution of this Type :—(a) A long cumbrous pred., if placed immediately after *is*, would have spoiled the sentence. It is, therefore, put at the end, a pronoun taking its place after *is*, in order to avoid VS! 1° *Agus is é freagra a fuair sé* :—“*Amgeal is ea mise. Is mé an trínað h-amgeal gur tuisce dáiré do moiu ar son an tsánuigheora. Agus anois tá trí gúre agat le fáil ó Dia na glóire. Iarr ar Dia don trí gúre is toil leat 7 geobair iad. Ac tá don cómairle amáin agam le tabairt duit. Ná dearmad an trócaire.*” Here the pred. contains six complete sentences, and could not possibly be put immediately after *is*. (b) To put even a short pred. after *is* would sometimes sacrifice some important shade

of meaning. A vivid, rhetorical form is required, and Type II supplies it:—2° *Is é is fada liom go mberò an baiste sin déanta* (CMO. 326)—I long exceedingly to have that baptism accomplished. 3° *B'é b'fada leis go raib sé amuig* (S. 39)—The one thing he longed for was to get out (See note on this sentence, "Studies in Modern Irish," Pt. I, 16-17).

247.—Type II. b.—VpS *ná* P.—More vivid and rhetorical than the preceding, and should be used only when rhetoric is justified.—1° *B'é cómarcta é sin ná a bás 7 a aiséirge féimig* (CMO. 274)—This sign meant precisely His own death and resurrection. 2° *Sé ruo a òem íosa ná ceist a cur cúca* (CMO. 336)—J. simply put them a question. 3° *Is é ruo a òem sé ná an breic do cur ar a t-ia* (Mac. I, 59)—He simply postponed the judgment. 4° *B'i seoró í sin ná b'aisti* (Bn. 616)—The treasure I mean was Vashti.

248.—Type II. c.—VpS *ac* P.—Canon O'Leary does not use this. But his books are full of the rhetorical questions and negations from which this type has developed.—1° *Cia gceobad tar an nórús ac Séana?* (S. 89)—Who should pass the door but S? This leads to—*b'é oume gaid tar an nórús ac S.* 2° *Níor òem sé ac éirge 7 imteact amac* (CMO. 175)—He just rose up, and went out. The information given here can be conveyed in at least seven different ways, each with its own shade of meaning:—(a) *O'éirig sé 7 o'imtig sé amac* (Bald statement of fact). (b) *Do òem sé éirge 7 imteact amac*—He *deliberately* rose and went out. (c) *Níor òem sé ac éirge 7 imteact amac*—He *simply*, etc. (d) *Cad a óeapad sé ac* (Rhetorical). (e) *'Sé ruo a òem sé* [More vivid than (b) or (c)]. (f) *Sé ruo a òem sé ac* [more vivid still than (e)]. (g) *Sé ruo a òem sé ná* (most vivid of all).

249.—Type II. d.—VpS *mar* P.—Here, *mar* is pleonastic, just as "because" is, sometimes, in E. We say—(a) He stayed at home (the fact), because he was unwell. So, in I.—*O'fan sé sa baile, mar ní raib sé*

ar fógnaím. (b) A rhetorical form :—E.—The reason why was (because) he was unwell. I.—'Sé cúis gur fan sé sa baile (mar) ná raib sé ar fógnaím :—'Dubairt sé gur é cúis n-a n-éig sé i bfolac, mar go raib eagal air (bn. 3)—He said he went into hiding, because he was afraid.

250.—Development of ná :—1° From neg. ná in :—(a) rhetorical questions. (b) rhetorical negations ; 2° comparative ná.

1°a :—Cia déarfadó ná gur deas-óime é ?—Who will say he wasn't a good man ? This leads to—sé déarfadó gac doimne (ná) gur ó.ó. é.

1°b :—Ní bíod fíos as doimne ná gur óime de muintir na tíre é (n. 138)—No one knew but that he was one of the natives. This leads to—'Sé ceapadó gac doimne (ná) gur óime, etc.

2° Níl don cuma is fearr cum na hoibre déanam ná an gacum do saotrú ms na h-áiteanaib 'na bfuil sí beo fós—There's no better plan for accomplishing the work than to work up I. wherever it is still living. This leads to—'Sé cuma is fearr ná The mod. compar. and superl. having the same form helps this assimilation.

251.—Type III.—VpSP.—In Type II the subj. contains a rel. clause, implicit or explicit. In Type III the subj. is simple—a noun preceded by the art., or followed by an adj. Contrast with Type I.—1° Gurb í an íomáig úo an nádúir óadonna (KTB. 3)—That that image represents human nature. 2° 'Sé an namáo an peacadó (Ser.)—Sin is the enemy (E. begins with the logical pred.). The context shows that Can. O'L. was writing about "the enemy" not "sin." The same words, in the same order, might be a sentence in Type I. One might be talking of sin and saying that it is the enemy. We must look to the context to guide us as to which Type is in question.

252.—Type IV.—PVpS.—The pred. here, as in Type VI. Classification, is projected, for rhetorical effect.—

1° An bean cosnoctaithe is í a bí ann (S.)—It was none other than the bare-footed woman. 2° An níò is creto-eamant dóib is é is mian leo a séanao—The very thing that is a credit to them they want to disown. (E., as I., often begins with the logical predicate). 3° An níò atcí an leanb is é a gníò an leanb (UP.)—What the child sees, that the child does. 4° 'Té cuireas 'sé bameas (UP.)—He who sows reaps. 5° An luib ná fahtar is í fóireann (Proverb)—The herb that helps cannot be found.

253.—Type V.—PS.—1° eom baiste an mac san (CMO. 17)—This child was John the Baptist. 2° Iomao na lám a bameas an cat (UP.)—Its the number of hands that wins the battle. 3° Na méara na súile is géire bíos as oll (Smb. 66)—The fingers are the sharpest eyes of the blind.

254.—Type VI.—SP.—1° Mise caithín an Tigearna (CMO. 19)—Behold the Handmaid of the Lord. 2° Beata teanga í labhairt—If a language is to live, it must be spoken. 3° Caibair an boctám beal na h-uaiqe (UP.)—The mouth of the grave is the poor man's refuge. 4° Ceo ar abainn, ceo an tsonais, Ceo ar cnoc ceo an donais (UP.)—A river-mist is prosperous, a hill-mist unfortunate. N.B.—Type V is related to Type I or Type IV, in both of which P precedes S. But Type VI is related to Type II, in which S. precedes P. Type V therefore, when dependent, becomes Type I or Type IV :—An ruo is annam is iongantac (V) becomes Type I :—Deir an seanfocal gurb é an ruo is annam is iongantac. Or—Type IV—Deir an seanfocal an ruo is annam gurb é is iongantac. But—Tir gan teanga tír gan anam (VI) becomes Type II :—Deir an seanfocal gurb é saasas tír gan teanga ná tír gan anam.

255.—Type VII.—VPS.—The pred. is a pers. pron. 1 or 2 p., or a demonstrative, 3 p., or a pers. pron. strengthened by féin :—1° Má's tu an Críost (CMO. 333)—If Thou art the Christ. 2° Measaim gurb í féin is fearr a tuig a camnt (CMO. 113)—I judge that She

herself understood His words best. 3° *mar is tu do réab mo éroíde ó céite* (CCU. 50)—For it is you who have torn my heart asunder.

256.—Type VIII.—VpPS.—Same as Type I, except that the subj. is here one of the prons. which are preds. in VII. It has been said that in Ident. sentences these prons. must always be pred. This is wrong :—1° *An é an cárta dub é sin ? ní hé, ac an cárta bán*—Is that *the black card* ? No, but *the white one*. *An é sin an c. o ?* = Is *that* the black card ? And the answer would be, e.g., *ní hé ; sin é é*—No—here it is. The same Eng. words, in the same order, convey at least three different meanings :—(a) Is *that* the b. c ? *An é sin an c. o ?* (b) Is that the *black* c ? *An é an c. o. é sin ?* (c) Is that the b. *card* ? *An é an cárta o. é sin ?* (with emphasis on *cárta*). There is a tendency (a very wrong tendency) to make (a) do duty for all three. 2° *Is é mo corp é seo*—This is My Body—This is the correct translation of “Hoc est Corpus Meum.” 3° *Is é Críst Mac Dé sin* (Dott. II, 13)—This is Christ the Son of God. Cf.—4° *So fíor do é Mac Dé é sin* (C.S. 83)—Truly, this was the Son of God.

257.—Type IX.—VpSP.—The same as Type II. a., except that the proleptic pron. is *eaò*. It is common in the literature down to the early modern period :—1° *Is eaò doúdairt “ ní tábair dúine uair an níò nac bí aige ”* (KTB. 8)—This is what he said :—“ One does not give away what one has not.” 2° Common in “ *mar ò eaò* ” when the *eaò* is proleptic :—*mar ò eaò go raib sé ar meisge*—pretending that he was drunk. *É* (understood)=the state of affairs, is subj. of *ò* (=bàò).

258.—Type X.—SVpPs.—1° *An té doúdairt an éinnit sin, b’ é a gceann go léir é* (CMO. 366)—He who said these words was the Head of them all. The *projection* emphasizes the subj. The reference is to our Lord. 2° *An ruò gur dóic leis an nouine gurb é a teas é* (CMO. 195)—What one imagines is for one’s good.—This could hardly be put neatly in any other form.

259.—Type XI.—PsS.—1° *Cao iad na neite is gádar-
aige?* What are the most necessary things? A definite
answer is expected. 2° *Cia hé an fear é sin?* Who's
that man? *P=Cia*; *s=é*; *S. an fear é sin.*

260.—Type XII.—SVP.—In relative sentences like—
Is é Íosa is Críost ann—Jesus is the Christ. A sentence
of Type I, but the subj. (*an té a is Críost ann*) is Type
XII.—*S=a* (rel. understood). *P.=Críost.*

261.—Note on Proper Names.—There are at least four
uses of words like *Éamonn*:—1° *agus (is) Éamonn a dtair*
(S. 20)—and his father is “an *Éamonn*” also. *Éamonn*
indefinite. 2° *Is é Éamonn pé noéar é*—It is *É.* who is
responsible. *Éamonn* definite—an individual term.
3° *Éamonn is ainm roo*—his name is *É.* Here *É.* does not
point out a person at all, but a name. It means—“a
name spelled *É-a-m-o-n-n*” and is therefore indefinite.
4° *Sé ainm a bí air ná Éamonn.*—A nominal sentence
like 3°. *É.* indefinite.

262.—The proleptic pron. in Type I. Ident. is due to
Types II, III, and IV. In these the pron. is absolutely
essential (in order to avoid VS). Without adverting to
the fundamental difference between these and Type I.
people began to insert the pron. in the latter. But a
definite noun may come immediately after *is* (even
outside Type XII, where such is nearly always the
case):—1° *Ní h-anois an céad uair a beir aicne curta
agat ar m' fearg (lúc. 14)*—This is not the first time
you'll have experienced my anger. 2° *Is anois é (CS.
223)*—It is now. 3° *Ní h-móiu ná moé a cuireas aicne
ort*—It isn't to-day or yesterday I came to know you.

All these predicates contain the definite article.

C.—Complex Elliptical Sentences:—

263.—1° *Ní mar geall ar foclaib camnte do molfar
tú (lúc. 4)*—It is not for mere words you will be praised=
ní focail camnte an nio go molfar tu mar geall air.
(Pred. indef. Observe the direct rel. *do* in the first
form). 2° *Is dom-sa do geallao i 7 is ormsa atá an
feall véanta (TBC. 196)*—It was to me she was pro-

mised, and it is I who have been betrayed=*is mise an té gur gealladh dó í, 7 is mise an té ar a bfuil an feall déanta* (Preds. definite). 3° *Is ó tuair cun Galilí a tug sé aghair* (CMO. 313)—He turned northwards to Gallilee=*is í an áirde tuair cun G. an áirde ar ar tug sé aghair* (Pred. definite). 4° *Ní liomsa a baineann an cáinnt sin*—Those words do not refer to me=*ní mise an té go mbaineann an cáinnt sin leis* (Pred. definite). All such sentences should be expanded in this way, to secure a clear subj. and a clear predicate.

Idioms with the Verb *is*.

264 (a).—The prep. *le* with certain adj. preds. denotes the subjective view ; *do* the objective fact :—*an ruo is féidir leat, is féidir duit é*—What you *think* you can do, you *can* do. (b) Idioms with *beag, mór* :—

1° *Nár cóir nár beag dí a bfuil aici ceana díob* (TBC. 15)—Ought she not to be satisfied with what she has of them already ?

2° *Is beag acu saróbreas gan mórclú* (TBC. 35)—They think little of riches without reputation.

3° *Ní ró-mór agham-sa é* (TBC. 53)—I don't think very much of him.

4° *Ba beag agham mo saogal a beit buan nó díombuan* (TBC. 63)—I cared little whether my life were long or short.

5° *Nac beag leat a luata* (TBC. 76)—that you think it all too soon.

6° *Ní mór le Dia dóib an saróbreas do sgaipe com tuig is is maic leo é* (CMO. 343)—God does not begrudge it them to squander their wealth as fast as they like.

265 (a).—Corrective *ní n-eadh*—used, like the English “*nay*,” to tone down a too-strong assertion, or to add to a too weak one :—1° *Is dóca, ní headh, ac is deimhin* (CMO. 183)—It is likely, nay, certain. 2° *Ní headh, ac abalta ar a cur fiachain ar mioscais an áirseora glóire a tabairt do Dia* (CMO. 3)—Nay more, able to compel the devil's malice to glorify God. 3° *Ní n-eadh, ac do fíora an cáinnt ó tosac* (CMO. 5)—Nay, more, the words were verified from the very start.

(b) **b'féirir**, perhaps :—1° The Fut. tense is not, as a rule, used after **b'féirir**, though it may be used before it :—**fiaprócaíó uime, b'féirir, cao na taoib gur cuir an Slánuigíteoir an mallact ar an scrann** (CMO. 383)—Perhaps someone will ask why the Saviour cursed the tree. Once Can. O'L. has the Fut. after it :—**b'féirir go maicpró sé do peacaí uuit** (bñ. 665)—Maybe He will pardon you your sins. 2° **b'féirir** go **b'fiaprócaíó uime éigim cao na taoib gur labhair Íosa cainnt nár cuigeaó** (CMO. 327)—Perhaps someone will ask why Jesus used words that were not understood. 3° **b'féirir** may be followed by—The Pres. Indic. actual or habitual ; the Past ; the Imperfect ; the Conditional. The Fut. may, of course, follow **má's féirir** ; and the vb. n. may follow both **má's féirir**, and **b'féirir**.

266.—ní fuláir ; ní mór ; ní fuláir nó

(a) **fuláir**=excess, hence **ní fuláir**=it is not excessive, i.e., it is necessary. **Ní mór** has often a similar meaning, but perhaps **ní fuláir** is stronger.

(b) 1° **ní fuláir**, expresses logical necessity, or duty or obligation (with implicit reference to some responsible agent) :—**ní fuláir gur mar sin atá**, it must be so (log. nec.) ; **ní fuláir é déanam**—it must be done (by somebody). 2° **ní fuláir do** expresses duty, obligation—with explicit reference to an agent :—**níorb fuláir do dul 7 aóðar do soláctar** (S. 7)—he had to go to procure some (leather). 3° **ní fuláir nó** expresses logical necessity only.—**ní fuláir nó tá tuirse ort**—you must be tired. “**nó**” is due to ellipsis :—**ní fuláir (gur uime ana-láirir tu) nó**—You must (be a very strong man) or else you're tired.

(c) When **ní fuláir** is not itself dependent, either the direct or the dependent form follows **nó**. It is a question of whether the latter clause (in the full sentence, where nothing is suppressed) is conceived as being the second member of a disjunctive proposition, in construction with **ní fuláir** ; or as an independent conclusion, formed by the rejection of the statement introduced by **ní fuláir** :—Thus :—

A.—**ní fuláir**—(1) **gur uime ana-láirir tu ; nó** (2) **go**

bruit cuirse ort. Here go in (2) is just as natural as gur in (1). Then, suppressing (1) we get—ní fuláir nó go bruit cuirse ort. Here, the only surprising thing is the illogical retention of nó.

B.—Ní fuláir (1) gur dume ana-láir tu ; nó (2)—independent conclusion, not in construction with ní fuláir—tá cuirse ort. Then, suppressing (1) we get—ní fuláir nó tá cuirse ort—which is more abnormal than the final form of A. Only the retention of nó saves it from being a monstrosity.

(d) When ní fuláir becomes nac fuláir, nárð fuláir, the clause following nó will always be dependent. But the dependence may be either on nac fuláir, the two parts of the disjunction (in the full sentence) being in construction with it, and only through it, with the introductory verb. Thus :—

A.—Cao déarfad na daoine ac nárð fuláir—(1) gur dume dána tar na beartaib é ; nó (2) nár gáð óó féin don eagla beir aise roimis an aimm. Here, if we suppress (1) the resultant sentence (S. chap. 19) necessarily shows the dep. form after nó, but (thus conceived) the dependence is due to nárð fuláir, and not to déarfad. Or the dependence may be due to déarfad. Thus :—

B.—Cao déarfad na daoine ac—(1) nárð fuláir (gur dume dána tar na beartaib é), nó (2) nár gáð aimm. Here, nár following nó depends directly on déarfad.

267.—Is cuma nó—equivalent to, like, as good as, as bad as, etc., is got, not by suppressing one member, but by a little transposition :—From sentences like 1° Ba cuma linn bás nó beata annsan (TBC. 152)—Life or death would be all the same to us, then—are easily derived sentences like the following :—2° Is cuma nó muc dume gan seipt (Proverb)—A shiftless fellow is as useless as a swine. (<is cuma o. gan s. nó m). 3° Is cuma nó bás an beata so—This life is not much better than death (<is cuma an b. so nó bás). Sometimes there is no transposition :—4° Is cuma a gníomh nó an spleannc ! (TBC. 113)—His action is as quick as lightning ! Transposed :—Is cuma nó an spleannc a gníomh.

5° *1s cuma imeasg a namad é nó leon i measg caorac* (TBC. 51)—Among his foes he is ruthless as a lion. Transposed :—*1s cuma nó leon é.* 6° *1s cuma é nó coinneal adanta* (TBC. 51)—He is a lighted taper (Cuma nó tones down the metaphor. Transposed :—*1s cuma nó c. a. é.* 7° *1s cuma nó aincheart lom-cheart* (Proverb)—Bare justice is not much better than injustice (<*1s cuma l.c. nó ain-c.*). 8° *1s cuma tu am' aigne-se nó aingeal ón oTígearna* (bh. 413)—To my mind you are just an Angel from the Lord. Transposed :—*1s cuma nó a. . . . tu.*

Notice how the meaning of “ *1s cuma nó* ” is coloured by the context.

268.—Very common is the following idiom :—

1° *ní brúigte go out i n-aois, 1s ní múinte go coiscric*—One is not down and out till old, and he who has travelled is most polite. 2° *ní féasta go rósta, 's ní céasta go pósta* (Proverb)—The best feast is a roast. and marriage is the greatest torture ! 3° With *ac* instead of *go* :—*ní glóire go grém ac neam, ní torann tréan ac tóirneac* (Of. 54)—No glory like the Sun, save Heaven, No really loud report but thunder. 4° *ní h-aiíteantas go h-aoimtiúgas* (Proverb)—“ If you want to know me, come and live with me.”

269 (a) *1s minic gur* :—When any vb. other than *is* follows *is minic*, there is a direct rel. (for oblique, in temporal clause). But an *is* clause is introduced by *gur* (*nae, nár*) :—1° *1s minic gurb ead 1s giorra bím ouit* (Im. 160)—It is oftentimes I am nearest to you. 2° *1s minic a bios i gcuideactam 7 gurb fearr liom ná beinn* (Im.)—I have often been in company, and would rather I had not. 3° *1s minic gur boct an gnó dúinn é 7 gur pollam* (Im.)—Oftentimes it is a vain and foolish proceeding.

(b) In dependent “ *is* ” sentences *ab* is *not* inserted after *gur* before a vowel :—1° When pred. is a vb. n. phrase :—*Oubart féin gur i comead annso ba ceart* (n. 251)—I myself advised that she should be kept here. 2° When pred. is a prep. pron.—*Mar o ead gur ortá*

san a bí sí as féadaint—As though she were looking at them. 3° When pred. is a prep. phrase :—O'admuigeadar gur ar niam a bí a búrdeacas acu (n.)—They admitted it was N. they had to thank for it (But see Ser. 52). 4° When pred. is an adverb :—Ceapas láitreac gur annso a bí sí (S. 78)—I concluded at once that she was here. 5° Sometimes when pred. is an ordinary noun :—Ná bí gá leogaint ort gur amaóán tu (S. 77)—Don't pretend that you're a fool.

270.—The Substantive Verb.—(a) The vb. *is*, being a logical copula, can never connect a substantive (n. or pron.) and a mode of being, because what is denoted by a substantive can never be identified with a mode of its being. The vb. *is* can be used only :—1° To connect two substantives (n. and n.; n. and adj.; pron. and n.; n. and pron.) :—Is ainmíróe capall—a horse is an animal ; Is maic bean deas-fir (TBC.)—a good man's wife is good ; Is tusa pé noear san—you are responsible for that ; An tu san?—Is that you? etc. 2° To connect two modes :—Is na seasam a bí sé—it's standing he was. Here, “na seasam” is one mode (pred.), and “a bí sé”=the state in which he was, is another mode (subj.).

(b) *τá*, on the other hand, being essentially a vb. denoting state or condition, can connect only a substantive and some mode of being :—1° *τá sé ar an úr-lár*—it's on the floor (Local). 2° *τá sí i gcruaó-cás*—she's in difficulties (Extension of loc. usage). 3° *Úi Liam ar aigne é réanam*—L. intended to do it (Mental condition—an extension of the local meaning).

(c) Where *τá* seems to connect two substantives, the second one is always modal :—1° *τá sé pas beas fuar*—it's a trifle cold. I.e., it's cold, to the extent of a little bit. *pas beas* is A. of Extent in Degree. 2° *τá sé iarractín as a meabair*—he's a bit crazy. *τá* connects *sé* with the mode—as a meabair. *iarractín* qualifies the statement (A. of Extent in Degree). 3° *Úi póil tamall 'na gréasair*—Paul was a cobbler for a time. *Tamall* is A. of Extent in Time.

(d) There is no pres. part. in I. The meaning is expressed by means of *τá+as+vb. n. (active)* ; or by

ro + a (G. pron.) + vb. n. (passive) :—1° *ṭáṭar aḡ ṵéanam ḡac don ṵicill*—One is doing one's best (active Auton.). 2° *ṭá ḡac don ṵiceall ṵá ṵéanam*—every effort is being made (pass.).

(e) With the past part. *ṭá* expresses :—1° The completion of an act :—*ṭá an leitr críochnuigte aḡam pé ṵeire*—At last I have the letter finished. 2° The resultant state :—*Ṵí na ṵóirse ṵúnta nuair a ḡroiseamair an halla*—the doors were closed (i.e., we found them in that state) when we reached the hall. N.B.—The Irish Trade-Mark "*ṵéanta i n-Éirinn*" is hardly defensible. If *is* is understood, it is wrong, because the reference should be to the *act* of manufacturing, and emphatically to the *place*. "*i n-Éirinn ṵo ṵeimead*" would do. Understanding *ṭá* things are even worse. "*ṭá so ṵéanta i n-Éirinn*" means either, "this article has been just made in I." or—"it is in the state of having been made in I." Neither of these conveys the right meaning.

(f) Immediate consecution of events is expressed by *ṭá + tréis (ṵ'éis) + vb. n.*—*aḡus tú tréis a ḡeallamaint ḡo ṵtíocrá*—Though you had just promised to come!

(g) With prep. *in* and G. pron. *ṭá* expresses :—1° Change—the contrast between what was and is ; what is and will be, etc.—*Ṵí sé 'na tráchnóna (Ṵn. 27)*—evening had come ; *ní ṵia éire 'na n-Éirinn (Ḥaic. 95)*—I. will no longer be I. 2° Actual Condition :—*Ṵí an ṵáisteac aḡ tuitim anuas 'na caisib*—the rain was coming down in torrents ; *Ṵiobar aḡ teact 'na ṵtámtib*—they were arriving in crowds ; *Siúo an fílrídeact aḡ rit tré m' aigne 'na caisi ceoil*—Lo ! poetry runs through my mind in musical streams. *An fáro a ṵeíó féar aḡ pás ṵ Oia 'na Ṵia*—As long as grass grows and God is God !

(h) Further exx. of *ṭá + in + G. pronoun* :—1° *Ṵí Caligula m' impire sa Róim (CMO. 253)*—C. was Emperor in R. (Change). 2° *ḡo raib 'na namaro aḡ an impire (Ibid.)*—that he was an enemy of the E. (Actual condition). 3° *Ṵeadó sé na cómarcta teinn ṵóib (CMO. 275)*—It would be a "sore sign" for them (Actual condition). 4° *na céann so-féicse ar an eaglais (CMO. 278)*—as visible Head of the Church (Change). 5° *uise a ṵeíó na cáise mór lároir (CMO. 302)*—water that shall

be a big strong stream (Actual condition). 6° *Tu śá ráð* *go bfuilir ro' Óia* (CMO. 334)—saying that you are God! (Actual condition). 7° *Ói sé fásta suas 'na tarrb* (TBC. 11)—he had grown up to be a bull (Change). 8° *Ói ainm Concuðair 'na taca nirt* (TBC. 88)—C.'s name was a powerful support (Actual condition—with a hint of change). 9° *Caspar go deo* (=berð sé go deo) *m-a asacán linn é* (TBC. 141)—it will be cast up to us as an eternal reproach (Actual condition). 10° *An corðe so tá 'na carrad le cruad* (CCU. 167)—this heart as hard as a rock (Actual condition).

These exx. show that in this construction *tá* does not always imply change.

(i) **mar a beað** :—1° *1 utreo go bfeacð an catar mar a beað coil* (CMO. 295)—so that the city looked as though it were a wood. 2° *Do connaic sé mar a beað éan* (S.)—he saw what looked like a bird. 3° *Tá mar a beað ciail daonna aise* (TBC. 11)—he has almost human intelligence. 4° *Óioð na daoine go léir mar a beoís as a meabair le buile átais* (CMO. 332)—The people were all out of their minds, as it were, with joyous abandon.

(j) Note the following uses with the prep. *ar* :—1° *Tá sé ar an bpear is giorra do'n easbog* (Bn.)—he is next to the Bishop. 2° *Ói orioðair o'eom féin ar òime acu* (Mac. 8)—one of them was a brother of John himself. 3° *Ó'féoir go mbeað sé air as Cú Culainn an raðarc o' fulang* (TBC. 176)—Maybe it would take C.C. all his time to support the sight.

(k) *tá le* means :—1° am with, on the side of. 2° advise, counsel, discuss with. 3° in temporal clauses *tá le* denotes a pres. perf., *bí le* a pluperf.:—1° *An té ná fuil liom tá sé am' comuib* (CS.)—He that is not with Me is against Me. 2° *Ni haon maic beic leat*—there's no use talking to you. 3° *féac, táim as teact annso le trí blianaib* (CMO. 329)—Behold, I have been coming here for three years; *Óioðar ann le mí*—they had been there for a month.

271.—Introductory *tá* :—(a) *Tá daoine ann, 7 is mó acu eolas do cruinniú ná beata maic do cáiteam* (Im.)—

some people make it more their study to know than to live well. (b) *Tá daoine ann, 7 le neart uadair do déanfaíois trosgaó ón mbiaó go bás* (Im.)—Some people, out of sheer pride, would fast from food till death. (c) *má tá gurb é an ríó do beir párdún a anma do'n braithe* (es. 78)—Although the king pardons the culprit. (d) *má tá gur bean curó v'á aniarasma ríá* (TBB. 89)—Even though some of its evil consequences affected her. (e) *Tá a lán daoine 7 is í a vtoil féin a bíonn uatá* (Im.)—many people seek their own way. (f) *Tá daoine, 7 ba maíó leo oia do sásam* (Ser. 147)—Some people would like to satisfy God.

Other Verbs.

272.—(a) The verb usually precedes its subj.—*lá vā raib sé as déanam brós* (S. 7)—one day as he was making shoes. (b) There are several exceptions to this rule :—1. Considerations of clearness and harmony, etc., may interfere with the normal order (VS+complement of pred.). See 314, D. 2. The subj. N. is often projected (168). 3. A relative subj. precedes its verb. (c) Interrog. pronouns and adjectives are *not* exceptions :—*Cia vēm é sin?*—Who did that? *Cia* is *not* subj. to *vēm*, but pred. to *is* understood. The subj. of *vēm* is *a* (rel. understood). The subj. of *is* is—*an cé a vēm é*.

273 —**Number** :—(a) The 3 sg. is often used with a pl. subj. :—*Cia vdeir daoine is é mac an Duine* (CMO. 277)—Who do people say the Son of Man is? (b) The pl. is used with a sg. subj. when it is a n. of multitude :—1. *tánadair an ceatrar*—the four came. 2. *nár vdeisao ál gac cránac coisgríce* (KP. 19)—that the brood of every foreign sow did not suck. (c) When, however, the multitude is conceived as acting as a single whole, the sg. is preferable :—*vudairt an tseisear go raóis ann go fonnmar*—the six women said they would go willingly. (d) The sg. or pl. is used with a dual subj.—*véanparó an vā teabbar so mo gno*—these two books will do me. (e) The analytic form of the vb., i.e., the 3 sg. along with *sib*, is used in 2 pl. pres. impft., fut. and condit., and pres. and past Subj.—1. *téigean sib a baile gac oróce*—

You go home every night. 2. *Cao na taoð ná rilleað sib ?*—Why didn't you return (habitually) ? 3. *Motpario sib i*—you'll praise her. 4. *Oo campeað sib i*—you would have blamed her. 5. *So oteigro sib slan a baile*—Safe home. 6. *Oa mbuaiteað sib umam*—if I had met you. (f) A sg. vb. is used with a rel. subj. even when the latter is pl. in meaning :—*Tos leat pé leabair atá uait*—take whatever books you want. (g) When the rel. is A. or D. (temporal, modal, local or instrumental) a pl. vb. may of course be used with a pl. subj.—1. *Na neite a oemro siao*—the things they do. 2. *Nuair a oemro siao a leicéroí*—when they do such things. 3. *ba oóic leat ar an gcuma 'n-a bfuilro*—you would think, by the way they are. . . . 4. *Cia'cu toir no tiar atáro*—whether they are in the East or West. 5. *pé'cu le scin nó le clárdeam a marbuisgeaoar é*—whether it was with knife or sword they slew him. (g) The 3 sg. is the only form in use, in modern I., in the ordinary pass. or auton. paradigms. The extant forms of the vb. is (in all moods and tenses) are 3 sg.

274.—Tense.—(a) The pres. habitual is used with *má* in a fut. sense. The fut. may be used if there is distinct reference to one particular occasion. *Motpario sib i má beró an molaó tuille aici*—You'll praise her of (on that particular occasion) she shall have deserved it. (b) The simple past tense has often the force of a pluperf. :—*Ói cataoir súgám aise oo oem sé péim oó péim* (S. 6)—he had a "soogawn" chair which he had made for himself. (c) In temporal clauses with *le*, the pres. is a pres. perft. and the past a pluperf. in force :—*So raib sean-aicne ag an annsprío ortá le faoa o'aimsir* (CMO. 95)—That the evil Spirit had known them for ever so long. (See 270, k).

275.—Mood :—(a) The Imperative is sometimes interjectional and sometimes conjunctional in value :—*Abair é*—True ! You may say so. Hear, hear ! *féac*—Look here (even when said to several). *Cuir i gcás go*—Even if. *Abair péim go*—Even though. (b) The imper. signifies the act or event which one commands to take

place. It is changed into the vb. n. when it becomes dependent :—1° *Ṭaíṛ 1steac*—Come in. But—*Abáíṛ leis teact 1steac*—Tell him to come in. 2° In such a case prohibitions are expressed by *ḡan* before the vb. n. or vb. n. phrase—*ná oem ḡuro*—Thou shalt not steal. But—*Ṭá órouiḡte úinn ḡan ḡuro a óéanam*—We are forbidden to steal.

276 (a)—The Indicative, being the mood of fact, expresses pres. or past facts; or future ones, not conceived as mere contingencies. The sentence may of course be negative. Or the fact may be referred to conditionally, but even then it is assumed to be a fact, past, present or future :—1. *‘Oo tánaṭas ḡam’ iarraíṛ mar baimcéile* (TBC. 2)—Messengers came to seek me in marriage. 2. *Má ḡeibean sí lom ar Concuḡar, beíṛ támte bó ḡo tuiḡ ó Cúige Ulao aḡam* (TBC. 6)—If she gets a chance at C I shall have (b) In the apodosis of a condit. sentence the Indic. is sometimes used for the Condit., to express the certainty of the result :—*Muna mbeaṛ tusa, ‘o bíos marṛ acu*—Had it not been for you, they would certainly have killed me.

277.—The Conditional partakes of the nature of a mood as well as a tense. (a) As a tense it is a secondary fut., *i.e.*, it represents the simple fut. when dependent on, or brought into connection with the past. *‘Oubáíṛt sé moé ḡo ‘otioḡarṛ sé moiu*—he said yesterday he would come to-day (This represents the direct statement—*‘otioḡarṛ imbáíreac*). The simple fut. is used after the pres. or the fut.—*‘Deíṛ sé (‘óearḡarṛ sé) ḡo ‘otioḡarṛ sé*—He says (will say) that he’ll come. *Sé ruṛ a céapas ná ḡo raḡarṛ sí i laíḡe*—I really thought she would faint. (This represents the direct thought—*raḡarṛ sí i laíḡe*). (b) In rhetorical questions like the following, where it is virtually equivalent to a past indic., the “tense” value is uppermost :—1. *Cao a cíḡmn ós mo cómaíṛ amac ac an ḡallán !* (S.)—What should I see in front of me but a pillar-stone ! (More vivid than *‘o connac*). 2. *Cé cíḡrois aḡ teact cun an ‘orais ac Séaṛna* (S. 89)—(A vivid way of saying *‘o connacṛar* . .

Or, equally vivid :—*b'é tóime connacáodar ac S !*). (c) The *condit.* occurs sometimes where English has the past tense.—*Ac ní déanfaínn ruo ort*—But I didn't do as you wished. Much stronger than *níor déimeas*, which simply express the fact ; whereas the *condit.* embraces the whole mental atmosphere that engendered the fact. Here the modal, not the tense value is uppermost. It is, in fact, a conditional sentence, with the *protasis* suppressed. The *condit.* may often have any one of three tense values :—1. *ní féadfaínn a ínnsmú tuic*—I couldn't tell you (now, or habitually). 2. I couldn't have told you. 3. I couldn't tell you (in the fut.). The past Subj. with *óá* has also these three tense values.

278.—The Subjunctive is the mood of *Idea*. Hence it is used :—(a) As an Optative (an idea to be realised) :—1. *Go b'póiriré óia ort*—God help you. (2) *Go mbuanuigiré óia tu*—Long life ! 3. *Surab amlairé tuic*—The same to you. 4. *Nár cúitigítear do shaoctar leat*—May your efforts not be rewarded. 5. *Nár feiciré mé an doilgeas céadna i súilib don mná eile arís coróce* (Smó. 91)—May I never again see the same grief in the eyes of any woman. (b) To express indefinite time :—The action or event is viewed as a pure contingency :—1. *Ná labair cun go labartar leat*—Don't speak until you're spoken to (if that happens). 2. *Sar a nóruróeado níos sía ó aimsir an Coláise* (MSP. 108)—Before I farther depart from my College days. (The departure is still vague). (c) As a final Subj. (to denote the idea aimed at) :—1. *Go gcuiriré sé bara a méire i n-uisce* (CMO. 334)—That he may dip the tip of his finger in water. 2. *ḡaib na n-eic úimn, a laoiḡ, go leanam iad* (TBC. 66)—Yoke us the horses, L., that we may follow them. (d) With *óá* (of an unreal condition) :—1. *Óá noemcú i ótuire ḡ i síoón na mírbúiltí a deimeadó ionaib-se is fadó ó a beadó aicrige véanta acu* (CMO. 315)—If in T. and S. had been wrought the miracles that have been wrought in you, they would long since have done penance. 2. *Óá mba fear omnac imeaglaó a beadó pósta agam ní oirpimis óá céile* (TBC 3)—Had I married a fearsome timorous husband, we

should not have suited each other. (e) With *muna* (to express uncertainty or indefiniteness) :—1. *Muna n-icir sibi feoil míc an Dúine, 7 muna n-ólair sibi a cúro fóla, ní beir beatha agair ionair* (CMO. 262)—Unless ye eat the flesh of the Son of Man, and drink His Blood, ye shall not have life in you. 2. *Muna n-éiscir sé leat, tabair leat dúine nó beirt eile* (CMO. 292)—If he listens not, bring with you one or two others.

Syntax of Conditional Sentences.

279.—In actual pres. suppositions with *má*, the apodosis may be :—1. Pres. indic. 2. Impft. 3. Past. 4. Fut. 5. Condit. 6. Imper. 7. Optative Subj.—*Má tá sé ann* (Protasis) :—1. *Tá an lá againn*, we win. 2. *Bíod sé ann anuirir leis*—he used to be there last year too. 3. *Bí dearmad orm*—I was wrong. 4. *Beir an sgeal go maic*—things will be all right. 5. *Beir sé conntabrtac é déanam*—it would be dangerous to do it. 6. *Lair sé*—let him speak. 7. *Ná ra' maic agat-sa*—no thanks to you !

280.—In past supposition with *má*, the apodosis may be the same :—*Má bí sé ann* (Protasis) :—1. *Tá buairte againn air*—we've beaten him. 2. *Bíod sé ann anuirir, leis*. 3. *D'airis sé an sgeal go léir*—he heard the whole story. 4. *Tabrfair sé fiaonaise*—he'll give evidence. 5. *D'fearra dúinn glaoðac isteach air*—we'd better call him in. 6. *Bíod sé m' fínné againn anois*—let's have him as a witness now. 7. *Conac san air !*—more power to him !

281.—In hab. pres. suppositions, the apodosis may take similar forms :—*Má téigean sé a baile gac oróce* (Protasis) :—1. *Tá dearmad ormsa*—I'm mistaken. 2. *Ní bíonn puinn fáilte romis*—he's not very welcome. 3. *Bíod dearmad ar tóg*—T. was mistaken. 4. *B'olc uaitse gan é innsint dúinn*—you might have told us. 5. *Beir eactra i tóg airite anocht*—there will be tales in a certain house to-night. 6. *Beir sé com maic againn éirge as*—we might as well give it up. 7. *Abair leis*

ceadt istead anois—tell him to come in now. 8. So mairrò sé céad—may he live a century !

282.—In habitual pres. (=fut.) and fut. suppositions with *má* :—*Má buaileann sé (buaileirò sé) umad* :—1. *Ní gearánta duit*—you needn't complain. 3. *Bí dearmad ar duine éigin*—someone was wrong. 4. *Féadfaid sib é socrú*—you'll be able to settle it. 5. *Beadh sé còmh maith agat labhairt leis*—you might as well speak to him. 6. *Abair leis ceadt i mbáiread*—tell him to come to-morrow. 7. *So mairrò Dia dó é*—God forgive him !

283.—With *má* and the Imperfect :—*Má bíodh sé ann gac oróce* :—1. *Ní tuigim-se é*—I don't understand it. 2. *Dó cíteá-sa é*—you were wont to see him. 3. *Bí sé ann an oróce úd*—he was there that night. 4. *Cia déarfaid ná go mberò sé ann anocht ?*—Who'll say he won't be there to-night ? 5. *Dó beadh sé ann anocht*—he'd be here to-night. 6. *Ná h-innis d'aoimne é*—don't tell anybody. 7. *So bfuairrò Dia air*—God help him !

284.—Conditional supposition with *má* :—*Má beadh sé oireamnac duit*—if it would suit you (as I'm sure it would) :—1. *Tá sé còmh maith agat é breith leat*—you may as well take it with you. 2. *Bí an ceart agam ó cianaid*—I was right a while ago. 3. *Féadfaid é tabairt tar n-ais cúgam*—you can bring it back to me. 4. *Beadh sé còmh maith agat é triail*—you might as well try it. 5. *Bíodh sé agat*—you may have it. 6. *So noéanairò sé maiteas duit*—may it do you good.

285.—Suppositions with *dá* :—The apodosis may be :—(a) The Conditional. (b) Sometimes suppressed, or virtually contained in the context. (c) The Past indic. for vividness :—

(a) *Dá noimeadh an uile duine agaid cion fir sa comrac, beadh an lá againn*—If every man of you would do a man's part in the combat we should be victorious (Fut. reference).

(b) 1° *D'fhás móiricos a raib aise ag aristéas dá*

mb'é fém a gheobhad bás ar tóuis (Lúc. 27)—M. left all his property to A. in case he predeceased him. The apodosis is merely hinted at. Expressed, it would be—
 1° tótreo, dá mb'é fém go bfuigeadh A. a raib aise.
 2° 'D'airig sé an gcallamaint a tug íosa do'n duine uasal, dá sgaraó sé leis an saibbreas saogalta (CMO. 364)—He heard the promise Jesus had given the young man if he would discard his worldly goods. Here the implied apodosis is :—(Do gcall sé dó dá) go mbeadh saibbreas ar neamh aise (CMO. 363)—he would have riches in heaven. 3° Dá mb'é Seán Ceatac fém é (S.)—Even S.C.

(c) 1° Dá nglacadh sé iad, bí buairte ag an áirseoir air (CMO. 93)—Had He accepted them, it meant triumph for the devil. 2. Dá mbeinn na cás bios cóim maib le h-arc (S.)—Had I been in his place I should surely have been as dead as a door-nail.

286.—Auxiliary oem :—Used to express insistence (in command or request) ; premeditation, deliberateness, a promise, etc. :—1° Déanfaidh sé tógáil suas (CMO. 261)—I will raise him up (Promise). 2° Déanfaidh siad cur acu do marbú (CMO. 324)—They will actually kill some of them (Premeditation). 3° Oemeadar an teampal do coisreacadh (CMO. 332)—They proceeded to consecrate the Temple (Deliberate action). 4° Ad' iarraidh go ndéanfaidh sé ceart a cur i bperom dí (CMO. 358)—Seeking that he would see that her rights were secured. (Premeditation). 5° Go ndearnaidh é fém do nise i bfuil ríog (rf. Bk. I, 322)—till he should contrive to wash in a king's blood (Deliberateness). 6. Oemrò é cómlíonadh (bh. 256)—See that ye fulfil it (Insistence in command). 7° Oem-se ár gcatana do tioro (bh. 823)—Go and fight our battles (Insistence in request).

287.—Neutral oem :—Used in a “quasi-passive” sense, meaning—“becomes, changes into” :—1° An cloic do rinne sliaib mór dí (TBB. 3)—The stone became a huge mountain. 2° Déanfaidh f'airisíneadh de (CMO. 360)—He will become a Pharisee. 3° Déanfaidh

bró lic' oigre v'ár scuro fola (TBC. 60)—Our blood will change into a mass of ice. 4° Bí sí as calcaò ⁊ as cruabócaint go dtí sur òem cloc ví (lúc. 7)—She stiffened and hardened, and finally changed into stone. 5° Do òem licíní sinne de'n airgead (S.)—The money was transformed into little flat pebbles.

288.—The Verb veirim :—(a) This vb. and its vb. n. ráð are often used where English has “think” :—1° Déarfad' ouine—One would think. 2° Ní veirim ná go bfuil an ceart asat—I'm inclined to think you're right. 3° Bí iongna mo éoróe orm, a ráð go nòéanfadó sé é—I was amazed to think he would do it. (b) The part. abarta is stronger than ráðte :—Tá abarta asam go dtabarfadó amac sib as an nguais seo atá oraib san Éigipt (bh.)—I have said (and I mean to stand by it) that I will rescue you from this peril you are in, in Egypt.

289.—Téigim.—The simple form cuair is often used for deasair, deacair, especially when the meaning is metaphorical.—1° Dá méir a bí an cion ar dtúis, sur cuair ana-breis air le cúpla lá (TBC. 162)—Great though the affection was at first, that it had increased considerably the last couple of days. 2° Dubairt sí liom sur cuas i scoitigtheadt go seoió ó anuirió—She told me I had grown very stout since last year.

Deasair (deacair) is also used :—Aas féac go nòeasair sé òe bean v'fagáil a beaò oílis vó (fSD. 11)—And yet he failed to secure a wife who would be faithful

290.—Impersonal Verbs :—1° Bí eagat air go scoitfead' air—He was afraid he would split. 2° Is é is vóicige go n-éireocair eatorca—It's very likely they'll disagree. 3° Ba vóbair go scaitfead' ar a misneac—Her courage almost failed her. 4° Do cuair dá scuro ríona—Their wine failed. 5° Raasair vóiot é vóanam—You'll fail to do it. 6° Do bris ar an bporóne asam—My patience became exhausted. 7° Do maoluig ar an nviogras, ⁊ do laguig ar an nvólse (bh. 261)—The zeal waned, and the loyalty weakened. 8° Ceip ortá an

ceist do réirtear (bh. 299)—They failed to solve the question. Cf.—189.

291 —The Autonomous Forms :—(a) It has been said that *tátar buailte* is the pass. of the act. auton., *buailtear*. This is wrong. *Tátar buailte* is an actual pres., whereas *buailtear* is an habitual pres. The true pass. of *buailtear* is *bítear buailte*—someone is (habitually) struck ; and even this represents the act as just completed, or else refers to the subsequent state. There is no pass.-auton. form for “someone is being struck (habitually).” The essence of the auton. is that the subject is suppressed. Hence no word defining the sex or the number of the subject is permissible. *Bítear dá bualaó* (b—, mb—) in the sense of “someone (man, woman, or several people) is being struck” is impossible as a pass.-auton. It says too much about the subject. *Bítear dá bualaó* is an act. auton. form, and can mean only—“someone is habitually striking him (it).” *Bítear buailte* is pass.-auton., but with the restrictions noted above.

(b) The following pass.-auton. forms are found. The corresponding active-auton. forms are given in the first column :—

Active-Autonomous

Passive-Autonomous

1° Pres. indic. actual :—

Tátar ag bualaó—someone is now striking.

Tátar buailte—someone is now just—struck.

(Or *tátar buailte* may refer to the subsequent state. There is no pass.-auton. for “someone is now being struck.” That requires the purely pass. form “*tá dume éigin dá bualaó*.” See (a) above).

2° Present Habitual :—

(a) *Buailtear*—someone strikes.

(a) *Bítear buailte*.
(But see (a) above).

(b) *Bítear ag bualaó*—someone is striking (contemporaneous).

(b) Wanting. See 292.

3° Past Indicative :—

- | | |
|--|---------------------------------|
| (a) Ծօ ԲԱՒԼԵԱԾ—someone struck. | (a) Ծի՛ւեաճ ԲԱՒԼԵ. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Ծօ Ծի՛ւեաճ աՅ ԲԱՒԼԱԾ—someone was striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292. |

4° Future Indicative :—

- | | |
|--|--------------------------------|
| (a) ԲԱՒԼԻՔԱՐ—someone will strike. | (a) Եի՛քար ԲԱՒԼԵ. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Եի՛քար աՅ ԲԱՒԼԱԾ—someone will be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292. |

5° Conditional :—

- | | |
|---|-------------------------------|
| (a) Ծօ ԲԱՒԼԻՔԻ—someone would strike. | (a) Եի՛քի ԲԱՒԼԵ. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Ծօ Եի՛քի աՅ ԲԱՒԼԱԾ—someone would be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292. |

6° Imperfect Indicative :—

- | | |
|---|-------------------------------|
| (a) Ծօ ԲԱՒԼԻՄԻ—someone used to strike. | (a) Ծի՛ւի ԲԱՒԼԵ. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Ծօ Բի՛ւի աՅ ԲԱՒԼԱԾ—someone used to be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292. |

7° Imperative :—

- | | |
|--|---------------------------------|
| (a) ԲԱՒԼԵԱՐ—let someone strike. | (a) Ծի՛ւեար ԲԱՒԼԵ. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Ծի՛ւեար աՅ ԲԱՒԼԱԾ—let someone be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292. |

8° Present Subjunctive :—

- | | |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| (a) Շօ ԵԱՒԼԵԱՐ—may someone strike. | (a) Շօ ԵԱԾԵԱՐ ԲԱՒԼԵ. See (a) 291. |
| (b) Շօ ԵԱԾԵԱՐ աՅ ԲԱՒԼԱԾ—may someone be striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292. |

9° Past Subjunctive :—

- | | |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| (a) ԾԱ ԵԱՒԼԻՄԻ—if someone were to strike. | (a) ԾԱ ԵԵի՛քի ԲԱՒԼԵ. See (a) 291. |
| (b) ԾԱ ԵԵի՛քի աՅ ԲԱՒԼԱԾ—if someone were striking. | (b) Wanting. See 292. |

292.—1° The remarks on *buaite* in **291** (a) apply to all the pass.-auton. forms given above. The (b) forms are wanting in all the moods and tenses in the pass.-auton. paradigm. In the fut., e.g., there is no such form for “someone will be being struck.” *Beirò roume éigin* *oá buatao* is a non-auton. pass. *Beirar as buatao roume éigin*, is active-autonomous.

2° (a) It is, therefore, wrong to say (as has been said) that the Auton. has a complete Pass. of its own. (b) It is wrong to say that the disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are used with it. In “*buaitear é*” *é* is not disjunctive. It is A. governed by *buaitear*, just as in “*buail é*” it is A. governed by *buail*. (c) The forms *buaitear*, *buaiteao*, *buairar*, *buairí*, *buaictí*, may be either pass. or auton. This is clear not only from old and mid. I., but also from mod. I. Keating often uses such forms in a pass. sense :—1. *marbtao leis é* (ff. Bk. I, 42)—he was slain by him. 2. *Oilmuigtear long leis* (*Ibid.* 52)—a ship is equipped by him. K., in fact was inordinately fond of the passive. This, however, cannot disprove the fact that there is an Autonomous in mod. I. The *ta-* forms are conclusive proof of this ; and those of other intrans. verbs (e.g., *siúbaltar*), though they might be explained as impersonal passives, are certainly autonomous in the minds of many speakers and writers of Irish.

3° The initial consonant of auton. (or pass.) forms often resists aspiration :—(a) *ní dóca go raibadar i bpaó sa cátair sar ar fiafruigeadó díob cé'rb' as iao* (CMO. 57)—Probably they hadn't been long in the city before they were asked where they were from. (b) *Do tanaetas 'gam' iarraró mar bam-céile* (TBC. 2)—Messengers came to ask me in marriage.

293.—Special uses of the Participle :—

A.—The Participle of Necessity :—In O.I. this was distinct from the ordinary participle. In mod. I. they have become confused :—1° *ní gearánta duit*—You need not complain. 2° *ní beirte duit ann*—You should not be there. 3° *ní n-ormsa is cósta san*—I am not to be blamed for that. 4° *as so an clann is clann oáiririb* ;

Riú so is sínte súž do cíog (HΔic. p. 91)—Here are the genuine children—to them you should offer the milk of your breasts. 5° Czerote žniom rom čaimnt is čairt (*Ibid.*)—Deeds are to be credited, in preference to words and paper.

B.—Forms with prefix ion, -in :—(a) 1° Δn riΔžΔil buō mleanta (OÖ. 56)—The rule that should be followed. 2° Mórān do neitib inscriōbta uirtī (*Ibid.* 94)—Many things that ought to be written about her. 3° Δs so is iontuigte (řř. Bk. I, 58)—From this it is to be inferred. 4° Is inmeasta (*Ibid.* 64)—It is probable. (b) Those like mpeaōma—fit for action :—1° ionΔirm (*Ibid.*)—able to bear arms. As Δirm looked like a G. (which of course it is not) such forms may have given rise to mpeaōma, etc.

2° Nī ionráirō (*Ibid.* 146.)—It is not to be said. 3° É řém do éangal re beit ionΔistīr (TBC. 287)—To gird himself to be fit for a journey.

CHAPTER VI.

SYNTAX OF ADVERBS.

294.—Note the following :—

1. *An saogal atá suas m'óiu*—the times that are in existence now.

2. *Óiodar annsúo anuas ar a cúro tailim (bñ.)*—There they were—planted on his land !

3. *Suas (better tuas)*—South (Art Bennett) :—*Is áro an céim do b'eir Seagán Ó Dálaigh do ollamh 's do bárd na tíre suas (CCU. 160)*—High degree giveth S. O'D. to the learned bards of the South.

4. *Tair aníos*—come up (from below) ; *tair anuas*—come down (from above) ; *tair (téanam) suas*—come up (when the speaker is coming up also).

5. *Raigad-sa anonn annso* (with emphasis on *anonn*)—I'll go aside here.

6. *íoir* still survives in Rathlin I. in the meaning of “at all.”—*An 'tíis tú anocht, nó an 'tíis tú amárach ? Nó muna 'tíis tú íoir, is truaḡ atá mé (CCU. 102)*—Will you come to-night, or will you come to-morrow ? Or, if you come not at all, my state is to be pitied !

7. *I 'tcreo go mbeaḡ neart na namao íoighe amuic is amac (bñ. 254)*—So that the enemies' strength should be utterly exhausted.

8. *Ói an muintir óḡ aḡ éirḡe suas, 7 an muintir a bí suas aḡ out i n-aois (bñ. 256)*—The young people were growing up, and those who were grown up were getting old.

9. *In coigtróis is lá m'óiu*—this day fortnight (in the past), *is=gus an—lit.*, a fortnight until to-day ; (*gus=* 50+initial *s-* of article).

10. In *cá=where ?* we seem to have the interrog. pron. *cá+an* (the prep. (?) found in *aníar*, etc.) suffixed.

The natural meaning is, therefore, "whence," but the word is used also meaning "where" and "whither."

11. When the idea of motion towards is involved, even though the verb is not one of motion, *isteach* and *amach* are used :—*Cóm tuat is bíodair isteach innnī do stad an ġaoċ* (CMO. 258)—As soon as they had entered the boat the wind fell.

295.—In—*pé sġeal é*, at any rate, etc., *pé* is supposed to stand for *ġrò bé*, where *bé* is pres. subj. of *ta*. This is possible in—*pé tume a berò ann*—whoever will be there—*lit.* though there be a person who will be there. But in—*pé sġeal é, pé né rém*, etc., where clearly we have to deal with the copula, it seems better to make *pé (bé)=b'é*, i.e., the pres. Subj. of the copula+*é*. Thus :—*pé sġeal é=ġrò b'é an sġeal (a is) é*—though the state of affairs be this. There seems to have been confusion between the copula and the substantive vb. here. Note that *é* in *pé* does not change for gender or number. This is due to *pé<bé=pres. Subj. of ta*.

296.—Expression of the Date :—Supposing to-day is Wed., July 14th, note the following way of referring to fut. and past dates :—

1° Fut.—

The 21st July will be :—*seachtmām ó inniu*.

„ 22nd „ „ :— „ „ *imbáireach*.

„ 23rd „ „ :— „ „ *ón doine seo cúġamn*.

„ 16th „ „ :—*umanoirċear (arġú, arú, aċrú imbáireach)*.

„ 17th „ „ :—*oia saċairn seo cúġamn*.

„ 28th „ „ :—*coiġċiròis ó inniu*.

„ 29th „ „ :— „ „ *imbáireach*.

„ 30th „ „ :— „ „ *ón doine seo cúġamn*.

„ 24th „ „ :—*seachtmām ón saċarn so cúġamn*.

„ 4th Aug. „ „ :—*trí seachtmāine ó inniu*.

„ 11th „ „ :—*ceiċre* „ „ „

„ 5th „ „ :—*trí* „ „ *imbáireach*.

„ 6th „ „ :— „ „ *ón doine seo cúġamn*.

2° Past.—

- 7th July :—Seachtmáin is lá iníu.
 6th „ :— „ „ „ iníé.
 8th „ :—Dáardaoin seo saib charainn.
 5th „ :—Dia luain „ „ „
 30th June —Coiscéir is lá iníu.
 23rd „ :—Trí seachtmáine is lá iníu.
 16th „ :—Ceitre „ „ „ „
 29th „ :—Coiscéir is lá iníé.
 22nd :—Trí seachtmáine is lá iníé
 15th „ :—Ceitre „ „ „ „
 1st July :—Seachtmáin is an dáardaoin seo saib charainn.
 24th June :—Coiscéir is an dáardaoin seo saib charainn.
 17th „ :—Trí seachtmáine is an dáardaoin seo saib charainn.
 10th „ :—Ceitre seachtmáine is an dáardaoin seo saib charainn.

297.—All these expressions (296) are adverbial. Seachtmáin (coiscéir (-deas), etc.) ó—are used only with iníu and imbáireac—not with iníé, arbú iníé, or umanoirtear. Instead of these, reference must be made to the day of the week. So, seachtmáin (coiscéir, etc.) is lá—are to be used only with iníu, iníé—not with arbú iníé, nor imbáireac, nor umanoirtear. Instead of these, reference must be made to the day of the week.

298.—Whenever the day in question can be designated (adverbially) by iníu, iníé, imbáireac, átrú iníé, umanoirtear (átrú imbáireac) these are the forms to be used—not Dia luain, etc.

CHAPTER VII.

SYNTAX OF CONJUNCTIONS.

299 (a)—The conj. **agus** is connected with the adj. **ogus**, in **rogus**, near. Hence it is used to connect two events which happen simultaneously, or close to each other in time :—1° **Is léir ón scáinnit go raib áigne na maigóine 7 í ag ráð na bpoat** (CMO. 30)—It is clear from what she said that the Virgin's mind as she said the words. . . . 2° **Ói mórán áobair maectnam ag an slánúigteoir 7 é 'na surde annsúo** (CMO. 138)—The Saviour had much food for reflection as He sat there. 3° **Ói an t-arán briste 7 an t-iasc briste ag méadóu i lámh an Tígearna 7 é áá otabairt do sna deisgiobuil** (CMO. 256)—The pieces of bread and of fish were multiplying in the Lord's hand, as He gave them to the disciples.

(b) In neg. sentences **agus** is conjunctive, **ná** disjunctive :—**Agus** :—1° **Ní raib puinn saogaltais ag Ióachim 7 Anna** (CMO. 35)—J. and A. (taken together as one domestic establishment) had not much worldly wealth. 2° **Ní raib cailín ar slíocht Ádam 7 Éva rob' uaisle os cómar De ná í** (CMO. 280-1)—There was no maid of the seed of A. and E. higher in God's sight than She. 3° **An té . . . ná déanfað meas cruinn roim ré ar an scostas, 7 ar an áobair 7 ar an eolus nárb' fuláir a beir ag an luét oibre 7 ag na saoir** (CMO. 328)—He who would not calculate carefully beforehand the cost and the material and the knowledge that the masons and other workmen must have. . . . (All these items considered, not separately, but together). 4° **Ní n-eol rom don liais is mó eolus 7 tuisgint ná é**—I know of no leech who combines more knowledge and intelligence than he does.

ná :—1° **Níl a curo ná a clú aise siro**—That fellow

has neither riches nor reputation. 2° *níl so ná súo acu*—They have neither the one thing nor the other. 3° *ní ouðart go n'óéanfaínn é ná ná 'óéanfaínn*—I neither said I would do it nor that I wouldn't.

(c) *ní* followed by *ná* gives a resultant affirmative :—1° *ní 'deirim ná go bfuil an ceart agat*—I'm inclined to think you're right. 2° *ní 'óearfaínn ná sur 'deas-óime é*—I'm disposed to think he's a good fellow. 3° *ní baogal ná sur tuis na Rómánaig tuac an tabarcais sin* (Bn. 833)—One may be sure that the Romans realised the value of this gift.

(d) *ní ná ní*.—This combination has a cumulative negative force :—1° *ní raib eagla 'dé air, ná ní raib beann ar óime aige* (CMO. 358)—He hadn't the fear of God, no, nor care for man, either. 2° *ní leogair síad ortá go bfeicir síad é, ná ní leigean seisean air go bfeiceann sé iad* (TBC. 149)—They don't pretend that they see him. No more does he pretend that he sees them.

(e) *ná ná nó ná*.—In a negative clause, when the negative affects *nó*, the latter becomes *ná* :—*Má 'deintear toil an Tígearna is cuma an domhan cad eile a 'deintear ná ná 'deintear. Mara n'ódeintear toil an T. cad é an tairbe don nró eile a 'deintear nú ná 'deintear?* (CMO. 319)—If one does the Lord's will, it matters not one whit what else one does or does not. If one does not do the Lord's will, what's the use of anything else he does or does not?

(f) The use of *má* with the Condit. should be noted :—*Cá bfuil an cura a 'tabrfaó bean leis i gcomnib a toile? Má 'tabrfaó ní fíor-cura é* (TBC. 134)—Where is the knight who would bring a wife with him against her will? If he did, he's no true knight!

This assumes the supposition to be true.

(g) *nó* has often the meaning—"or else" :—*Ní maic í do éiall, nó níor múinis a gceact go cruinn 'do' 'ceactairib* (TBC. 17)—You haven't much sense, or else you didn't teach your messengers their lesson well!

(h) *mará*=*munab* :—1° *mará fíú, ámh, fillfir bur síotcáin oraib fém* (CMO. 246)—If, however, it is not worthy (of it) your peace will return to yourselves,

2° *ma ra ma it l i b m i s e d o c r e d e a m a i n t* (CMO. 334)—
If ye do not wish to believe Me. 3° In U.I. *a c t m a r*
often=*muna* :—*l s d u i n e b o c t s u a r a c m e a c t m a r b p a i g i o*
m e t u m a r s p r e (CCU. 100)—I'm a poor wretched fellow,
if I do not get you to wed.

(i) *da mba*=Even.—1° *da m b ' i a d n a d e i s g i o b u i l*
p e m i a d b i a d t u i s g i n t m a o l (CMO. 281)—Even the
disciples' intelligence was clouded. 2° *da m b a a s t r a c t*
a r a i l n e a c t p e m e, *i s b r e a g t a g o m o r i n a d e i r o r e*
(TBC. 5)—Talking even of beauty she's fairer far than
D. (Supply, as apodosis, something like—*d o c a i t p m i s*
s o a o m a i l).

(j) *da* introduces an unreal supposition, so that words
like *pum*, which can be used only in a neg. or virtually
neg. clause, may occur with it :—*da m b e a d s e a n n*, *7*
e o l a s n a h a i t e m a r a i b s e a s p u m d a o m e, *n i b a o g a l*
n a g o b p a g a d n a r i g t e p a g a n a c a s a n a n t e o l a s (Mac.
10)—If it (a supposed hidden treasure) had existed, and
many people knew where it was, those pagan kings
would certainly have had the knowledge of its where-
abouts.

(k) The N. after *na*, than :—As *na* contains a petrified
form of the rel. 3 sg. of *ta* (88c), the n. pron., phrase
or clause following it may often be parsed as subj. N.
to that verb :—1° *ta o i s e i b p a d n i o s p e a r r n a m i s e*—
You are much better than I (am). 2° *ta s i n i o s d e i s e*
n a m a r i s d o i c l e a t s a—She's prettier than you think.
But there is sometimes an alternative interpretation :—
n i l a o m n e i s p e a r r a t a m i g a s n a m i s e—No one escaped
better than I.—Here, we may supply after *na*—*m a r a*
t a m i g (m i s e) a s. *M i s e* being subj. N. to *t a m i g*, and the
whole clause *m a r a s*, subj. N. after *na*.

CHAPTER VIII.

SYNTAX OF PREPOSITIONS.

300.—Partitive *de* :—Occurs chiefly :—

1° After an adj. or n. of magnitude, multitude, intensity, description, etc. :—(a) *Stuaḡ de ḡaomib̄ boḡta na caṡraḡ* (CMO. 57)—Many of the poor of the city. (b) *Ón ḡceann ṡeas de'n loḡ* (CMO. 254)—from the South end of the lake. (c) *ḡaḡ beaḡ de ḡionós uirṡi* (CMO. 305)—that it is sufficient punishment for her. (d) *Don léas de ḡolus na ḡirimne*—a single ray of the light of truth.

2° After proleptic *sé*, *so*, *san*, *a* ; also after analeptic *san* :—

(a) *An mbeaḡ sé de ḡisneac aḡ íosa an ṡabbóro do ḡárú* (CMO. 336)—would Jesus have the courage to violate the Sabbath. (b) Sometimes proleptic *sé* is omitted :—*ḡí raib̄ de ḡánaḡt ann a ḡúile amám o'íompáil suas cun na ḡḡlaṡas* (CMO. 359)—He was not bold enough to raise even his eyes to Heaven. (c) *ḡá cuirimis san de ḡasta ar ár ḡlóire ḡo ṡeicḡimis ón ḡcrois* (Im. 224)—Let us not so far insult our glorious calling as to shirk the cross. (d) *ḡa ḡait an ḡéaḡ a beic de ṡubaiṡte uirṡi é ḡá pḡsaḡ* (S. 112)—It would have been a good thing if she were so unfortunate as to have him marry her. (e) *Is beaḡ oume a raib̄ sé de ḡánaṡeacṡt ann cuairṡ ṡabairṡ ar a ṡeac* (Smb. 15)—Few people were bold enough to visit her house. (f) *ḡí raib̄ sé de ḡisneac aḡe out isteac* (Smb. 147)—He hadn't the courage to go in.

3° After a neg. (including *ḡan*) with *aḡ* :—

(a) *ḡí bíoḡ de ḡúṡaḡ air aḡ seicṡ fan cuim air* (CMO. 81)—His only clothing was a hide around his waist. (b) *Aḡus ḡan de ḡaomib̄ mnṡe aḡ cúḡ míle ḡear 7 ceicṡe míle ban* (ḡḡ. Bk. 1, 168)—Seeing that there were in it only 5,000 men and 4,000 women. (c) *ḡí raib̄ de ḡáirṡib̄*

as pól Dub áct a gléas ceoil (Sm̃b.)—P.D. had no friend but his instrument.

4° Before the compound relative (*Cf.* 1°) :—

(a) An té is breásta o'á breacairó súil duine riam̃ ar an saogal so (S. 61)—The finest person that human eye ever saw in this world. (b) Sí bean is uaisle í o'á raió riam̃ ann, 7 o'á mberó go deo ann—She's the noblest woman that ever was, or ever will be.

5° After the compound relative (*Cf.* 1°) :—

(a) 1 ñdairó ar tuit o'uaislió lochlannac leis (ff. II. 224)—Seeing he had slain so many Lochlannach nobles, (b) Tréis ar tuḡamair de ḡráó 7 de cion 7 o'annsaect oá céile (TBC. 165)—After all the love and heartfelt attachment we had given each other.

6° After comparatives and superlatives :—

(a) Is fearr de tairó é ná an f̃innbeannac (TBC. 8)—He's a better bull than Whitehorn. (b) Ba measa de duine mé as teact dom̃ (Im. 36)—I was a worse man on leaving them.

7° By a sort of inversion the noun of description follows de :—

le com̃a de'n tsasas san (TBC. 94)—with this sort of condition. But we say—a leicéro de com̃a, not com̃a oá leicéro.

301.—Defining de (do) :—(a) Is eol duit ó c̃aim̃nt daoine m'feabhas-sa de rí, 7 a olcas san o'foḡlaíde (lúc. 32)—From what people say you know how good a King I was, and how bad a robber he was. (b) Do b̃riḡ go raió do c̃eangal aise ar an mbás, san teact oá ionnsaíge san forfógra (TBB. 106)—Because he had bound Death not to come to him without forewarning him. (c) rug (sé) neam̃ do roḡam̃ (ff. II, 112)—Took Heaven as his choice.

302.—Partitive as :—(a) Cía'cu acu san is fearr leat?—Which of these do you prefer? (b) Oá ḡeire beirt asam̃ tá dearm̃ad déanta asam̃—Smart as the two of us are, we've made a mistake. (c) So—doim̃e, duine, ana-curo acu—Any, one, many of them. (d) Do leḡis

sé an cúro acu a bí i ngáó le leigeas (CMO. 255)—He cured those of them that needed a cure.

303.—Prepositional Phrases :—These may be either :—

A. Substantival. B.—Adverbial. C.—Adjectival.—A. have been dealt with.

B.—1° *Bí sé ar meisge*—He was in a drunken state. 2° *le neart buile 7 báoise doubairt sé an cáinn*—He said the words out of sheer mad folly.

C.—1° *bean gan riagáil bean gan cíall*—A lawless woman is a senseless one. 2° *féar fé leic riám is ead é*—He's altogether an original fellow. 3° *Dume le Dia, is fearr leis biaó ná bean* (UP.)—A man of God prefers food to a woman ! 4° *As gac áirde 1 gcian 7 1 gcómgar* (n. 120)—From every direction, far and near.

304.—Meanings and Uses of the Simple Prepositions :—

A.—Before nouns and pronouns :—

1° *Ar*.—Orig. meaning—before, for, because of.

(a) Modal :—*Ar bogadó*—loose ; *ar tarang*—drawn (of a weapon) ; *ar pánaíreacht aigne*—distractedly ; *ar soðar*, trotting, etc.

(b) Local :—*Ar muir, ar tír*—on sea, on land ; *ar tosac*—in front ; *ar deireadó*—behind ; *ar an saogal eile*—in the next world.

(c) Of the part affected. (An extension of the local meaning) :—*Do rug sé ar cluais air*—he seized him by the ear ; *ar an sgórnaig*—by the throat.

(d) Temporal :—*Ar bail*—presently ; *ar a dó a clog*—at 2 o'clock ; *ar teact a baile úinn*—when we arrived home.

(e) Pass. with vb. n.—*Tá an gáolumn ar labairt annso*—I. is spoken here ; *ar faigáil*—to be had.

(f) In respect of ; causal :—*Ar feabhas a pearsan 7 a méim* (l.O.)—because of the excellence of his person and disposition.

(g) Of measurement :—*Ar fadó, ar leiceadó, ar doimneas, ar doirde*—in length, breadth, depth, height.

(h) Dependent upon :—*Dume ar leac-súil*—a one-eyed man ; *tá sé ar beagán faigáltais*—he hasn't much to

live upon ; fear bíos ar don caraíð sa saogal áluinn seo (Smð. 1)—A man who is dependent on one friend in this beautiful world.

(i) Of price paid :—An mór a tugaís ar an mbuin ?—How much did you give for the cow ? When the price is not mentioned or alluded to, as, not ar, is used.—*Díoltaró sé as*—He'll pay for it.

(j) Of feelings, burdens, etc. :—*Tá ádas, brón, eagla orm*—I'm glad, sorry, afraid, etc.

(k) Among :—*Is ar do buaib-se do ruḡadó 7 do h-oileadó é* (TBC. 8)—It was among your cows he was born and bred.

(l) Duty or obligation :—*Is ar ríḡtib na múman atá onóir na múman do cosaint* (TBC. 196)—It is incumbent on the M. kings to defend M.'s honour.

(m) N.B.—*Díoró sé sin ar an té is lúḡa ar fadó* (CMð. 290)—Let him be the least of all.

2° **As** :—(a) Local :—*As so ḡo nás na Ríog*—From here to Nass. *Cadó as ouit ?*—Where are you from ?

(b) Temporal :—*As so amac*—from this on ; *as a h-aicte sin*—after that ; *as an nua* (or—*as a nua*)—anew, afresh.

(c) Modal :—*As eḡar*—disorderly ; *as ionadó*—dislocated ; *as a céite*—asunder ; *as seib*—evicted.

(d) Various :—*As a ainm*—by an abusive name. *Do ḡlaoradó as a ainm air*—he was called by an abusive name. *Do ḡlaoradó as a ainm é*—he was called by his own name.

(e) Cause, origin :—*A fearḡ a d'eimeas é*—I did it out of anger. *Ní maoróte ouit as*—you needn't boast about it.

3° **Cum** :—(a) Local or temporal :—*Deiró sí trí bliana déas cum na Bealtaine*—She'll be thirteen next May. (b) *An teice cum na h-Éigipte*—The flight into E.

(b) End, purpose, result :—*Raḡaró sé cum críce ouit*—It will turn out to your advantage. *Cum ḡo bfeicfinn am' súilib cinn é*—In order to see it with my own eyes.

4° **Do** :—(a) Possessive :—*Finnbeannaic is ainm do* (TBC. 8)—Whitehorn is his name.

(b) Motion towards :—*Do'n tobarr*—to the well. Obsolescent, in this sense, in Munster—*go, go rí, cum* and various prep. phrases taking its place.

(c) Final (denoting purpose) :—*ús (<oo fíos)*—for the purpose of finding out ; *o'féadamt*—to see. Now *féadamt* (without prep.). *Da máit liom an leabhar san oo léigeadó*—I should like to read that book (*oo léigeadó* denotes the purpose for which I should like the book).

(d) Of time :—*Do (oe) síor*—always ; *oo gnát*—usually, etc.

(e) Causal :—*Dom' (oem')* *oeom féin*—of my own free-will ; *o'amoeom oo oíctt*—in spite of your worst (best).

(f) Of the agent :—*Caó fé n'oeara ouit é oéanam?*—Why do you do it ? *As tabairt an airgíó oí oó (S.)*—as he gave her the money.

5° **De** :—(a) Motion from :—*Do léimeas anuas oe'n capall*—I jumped off the horse ; *Do cuir sé siar oe'n catáoir (Un. 334)*—he fell back off the chair.

(b) Partitive :—*Curo oe sna n-uaislib*—some of the nobles. (300).

(c) Cause, origin :—*Ciar' oíob tu?*—From whom are you sprung ? *Oá bárr san*—as a result of that ; *oá oeasgaib sin* (of bad results).

(d) Temporal :—*Oe ló is o'oróce*—by day and night.

(e) Of the material (as distinct from the instrument) :—*Do líonas an buroéat o'uisge*—I filled the bottle with water.

6° **In** :—(a) Local.—*1stíg sa tíg atá sé*—it is in the house (D.) *oo cuair sé istead*—he went in (A.).

(b) Temporal.—*1 n-aon uair a' cluig amáin*—In a single hour.

(c) Modal.—*'n-a cúis a táinig sé (msf. 179)*—He came on foot.

(d) End, purpose, result.—*Tiocfaid an maíad na óarírib oó*—The joke will end seriously for him. *Raíad sé i sochar dúinn*—it will profit us.

(e) With out :—*As out i n-aois as out i n-olcas*—Getting older, getting worse ; *out i bfuair*—getting colder.

7° **le** :—(a) Local (the radical meaning is “by the side of”) :—C1A tÁm1s leo’ co1s ?—Who came with you ? le1s an a1l1—Over the cliff.

(b) Temporal.—le cú1s bl1aòna òéa5 o’ams1r ní ra1b pól òub ’sa beròlín míle beala1s ó n-a cé1te—For 15 years P.D. and his violin had not been a mile apart.

(c) Cause.—ta5ann ma1t le cá1ròe—Good comes, if one waits for it.

(d) Instrumental.—le scm òo òemeaò é—It was done with a knife.

(e) Passive with trans. vb. n.—ta so le ráò—This much is to be said.

(f) Purpose or futurity with intrans. vb. n.—an slánu1gteo1r a bí le teaçt—The promised Saviour.

(g) With adj. denoting likeness and the contradictory :—1s cosma1l le n’ aça1r é—He’s like his father.

(h) Ownership, subjectivity (with 1s).—1s ma1t l1om taé, ac ní ma1t òom é ; 1s l1omsa é sm.

(i) With vb. of speaking to, listening to :—Cum 5o laòarçar leaç—until you’re spoken to ; é1st le1s—Listen to him !

8° **ó** :—(a) Local separation :—ó bláç Cl1aç 5o corca1s—From D. to C.

(b) Temporal separation :—ó 5om 1 le1t—From then till now.

(c) Agent :—òo n-o1ron1geaò ó ò1a é—He was ordained of God.

(d) Cause, origin, motive :—ó’n 1omaò òú1l m-a1rgeaò 1s eaò ta5ann an t-amleas 5o mín1c—Moral decadence often results from avarice.

9° **mar**.—Chiefly in such phrases as :—mar 5eall ar—because of ; mar bárr ar 5ac nòonas—to crown every calamity ; òume mar é—one like him ; mar an 5céaòna—likewise.

10° **ós** :—In adv. and compound prep. phrases :—ós áro—aloud ; ós íseal—low, secretly ; ós cóma1r—in the presence of ; ós c1onn—above ; bun ós c1onn—upside down.

11° **fé** :—(a) Of motion :—*Do rug Íosa an dáréas leis isteach fé'n dtír* (CMO. 254)—Jesus brought the Twelve with Him into the country.

(b) Of Time :—*fé maidin*—before morning ; *fé láthair*—at present.

(c) Local :—*fé tuige na gréine*—under the Sun.

(d) Modal :—*Toisc spiríóí a beic fé nbur smact* (CMO. 316)—Because spirits are under your power. *fé séan, sonas, brón, glás*—prosperous, happy, sad, locked up.

(e) Partitive :—*A cúis fícto fén gcéad* (MSF. 167)—25%.

(f) Multiplicative :—*fé dó, fé trí, fé céad*—twice, thrice, 100 times.

(g) Causal :—*Cad fá 'r cruthúig Dia sinn ?*—Why did God create us ?

12° **fan** :—(a) Local :—1. *Ói Íosa as siúbal an bótar ó deas fan aban lórdam* (CMO. 315)—Jesus was walking Southwards on the road alongside the Jordan. 2. *Ói sé as siúbal fan an bóthair* (CMO. 362)—He walked along the road.

(b) Temporal :—*fan na hamsire*—all the time ; *fan lae*—throughout the day.

13° **um** :—(a) Temporal :—*um Noúlaig*—about Xmas ; *um an dtaca san*—by that time.

(b) Causal :—*ume sin*—therefore ; *cad uime*—wherefore ?

(c) Local :—*Cuir sé uime a cúro éadaig*—he put on his clothes.

14° **go, to** :—(a) Motion towards :—*Cad é an fáro é ó Béal Feirsbe go bláit Cliait ?*—How far is it from Belfast to Dublin ?

(b) Modal :—*Do cuadais i gcotuigtheadt go mór*—You've grown much stouter. *go mór*—*lit.*—to a great extent.

(c) Temporal :—*Seachtmáin is* (=su-san) *lá muiu*—this day week (in the past). *Lit.*—a week till to-day ; *do déanfaois trosgad go bás*—they'd fast till death.

(d) For a special use in *is* sentences, see 268.

15° **roir** :—(a) Local :—**τὰ ῥακάσθ μίλε roir Córcatg** γ βέαι ἀτ ἀν ῥαορτάρθ—There are 40 miles between Cork and Ballingearry.

(b) Followed by **agus**=including and :—**roir mnáib γ mion-ῥαοine (CS.)**—including women and children.

16° **as** :—(a) Local :—**as seata na catrac is ead** buaileadōar umá céite—They met at the city gate.

(b) Possession :—**τὰ ῥά ῥαβδαίρην burde asam (Song)**—I have two little yellow goats.

(c) Partitive :—See 302.

(d) With vb. n. to express the pres. part.—**τὰ sé as** out a báile—he is going home ; **ῥí sé as** ῥéanam ar an ῥτíḡ—he was approaching the house.

17° **so**—with :—Rare in mod. prose. Found in the literature, especially poetry :—**so n-iomao séao (L.O.)**—with many precious stones. Common in composition. Also in **so leit** (with a half), and **so teor** (enough).

305.—B.—Prepositions after nouns and adjectives :—

(a) **níor fáḡ san iad ḡan beit so n-ana airead** orca fém (Im. 86)—That did not prevent them from being very watchful over themselves. **catair atá** teoranae le n-asótus (bn. 834)—A city on the borders of Asotus. **ῥí airead** ῥuit fém—Be watchful in your own interests. **τὰ αιτνε máit asam ort**—I know you well.

(b) **cao is bríḡ leis ?**—What does it mean ? **cao is** ciall leis ?—What's the sense of it ? **cao is mínú leis ?**—What's the interpretation of it ? **ῥí ῥά bríḡ leis an** bfeite sin (CMO. 294)—This Festival had two meanings. **τὰ ciall as méib, ac níl ciall leo' camnt-se (TBC. 59)**—M. has sense—your words have none.

(c) 1. **ῥí an tobar ar a ῥtugtar tobar lácóib buailte** leo (CMO. 138)—The well, known as J.'s well, was near them. 2. **níl sé oireamnac do Rígeact Dé (CMO. 297)**—He's not fit for the Kingdom of God. 3. **ḡan bac le** out cōm fada le deoc a ῥ'íarraio uirtí (CMO. 140)—Not to mention going so far as to ask her for a drink. 4. **ná bí** ró-tugta ῥoo' toil fém (Im. 40)—Be not over-fond of your own will : **tugact do'n peaca (Im. 45)**—proneness

to vice. 5. *Bíodó grádo aghaid dá céile*—love one another : *tá fuacht as an mbeirt dá céile*—the two hate each other. 6. *Bí sé ró-tugtha cun na díoghbála déanam, 7 bí an iomaio uúil san airgead aige, 7 san onóir* (Bn. 86)—He was too much given to injustice, and too fond of money and honour. 7. *Tá as uul dem' misneac pé deire* (TBC. 149)—My courage is at last beginning to fail me. 8. *Tá sac domne buídeac de*—he's very popular.

(d) 1. *D'iarras féin ceao ar Ádés beic ón mbao don lá amáin* (Lúc. 47)—I also asked leave of Hades to absent myself from the boat for one day. 2. *Ciúin ó fearg 7 ó buairt* (TBC. 5)—Free from anger and from worry. 3. *Is gearr ó brise riair brise caota* (TBC. 68)—Defeat in battle is not far from breach of discipline. 4. *Is uall ó méib a ceapao go nglacfi i n-donfeact iao* (TBC. 88)—It is shortsighted of M. to suppose that both would be tolerated. 5. *Táir síao as baint óo' neart* (TBC. 150)—They are sapping your strength. 6. *Tá an áit póllam ó daoine le faoa*—The place is long since uninhabited.

(e) 1. *Ní maoróte uuit as*—You've no reason to boast of it. 2. *A beic orm díol, leis, as na mairb* (Lúc. 41)—That I should have to pay for the dead as well ! 3. *Níl don ionntaoib aghat asam*—You don't trust me. 4. *Bíodó do muintin a Dia na glóire*—Put your trust in Almighty God.

(f) 1. *Níor fan beann acu ar anam ná ar beata ná ar saogal* (TBC. 127)—They no longer cared aught for life or livelihood or living. 2. *Níl don breic agham air*—It is quite impossible for me. 3. *Is báirdeamail le n-a céile luict don-céirde*—Same "trade," same "tirade." 4. *Ní raib don caoi aige ar é déanam*—He had no chance of doing it. 5. *Pé deire beir ar an ngnó, tá deire le camnt Sáo* (S.)—Whatever the upshot of this affair, there's an end to S.'s talk. 6. *Níl don faogail aghat air*—You'll never secure it. 7. *Tá sé cóim greamuigte sin ar Dia na glóire ná cuireann sé don tsuim i neitib saogalta* (Im.)—He is so grappled to Almighty God, that he pays no attention to worldly ways. 8. *Dein iarraact air*—Have a try at it. 9. *Bí sé lán-ullam ar é déanam*—He

was quite ready to do it. 10. *Ṭá sé oireamnac go maic aic*—He's quite capable of (doing) it. 11. *Ṭá sé socair ar beic na ságar*—He's determined to become a priest. 12. *Mo seasam inoiu orraib (n.)*—On you I rely to-day. 13. *Beir torad ar a saotar san*—Such a man's labour will not be in vain. 14. *Uruil don taicige agat ar an nsaoluinn a labairt?*—Have you any practice in speaking I.? 15. *Ní raib uaim aic ar a tuille a ráo*—She hadn't time to say any more. 16. *Níl aicne (cion, meas, gráin, greim, neart) agam aic*—I don't know (love, esteem, hate) him ; I have no hold on him ; I cannot help it.

(g) 1. *Ní fearad an mberois com tugta cun cogaró do déanam (TBC. 61)*—I wonder would they be so inclined to make war. 2. *Tugtaet cun géillead o'uaetarán (Im. 47)*—A ready obedience. 3. *Agus do toilig Símon cuige sin go fonnmar (bn. 836)*—And S. consented to this willingly. 4. *Do tugad fé ndeara nár féad sé riám cun a cairde féinig (bn. 843)*—It was observed that he never sought his own advantage.

306.—Prepositions after verbs :—

(a) 1. *Áicigim ar*—I convince, argue down one's throat :—*O'áiteodad sí ort gur ar meisge bí sé*—She would have you believe he was drunk. 2. *San bac do mnáib 7 mion-daoiné (CS.)*—Not counting women and children. *Ní bacfad leis*—I shan't mind it. 3. *Ní liomsa a baineann an cáinnt sin*—Those words don't refer to me. *Bain an méro sin an móráil díob (CMO. 366)*—This took the pride out of them. *An fírinne do baint aistí (CMO. 260)*—To take the truth out of it ; *Cad do bain duit?*—What happened to you ? *San cur leis ná baint uairó*—Without adding to or taking from it.

(b) 1. *Beirfar ort*—you'll be caught. 2. *Beir bean-naet om' éoróe go tír na héireann. . . . Cum a maireann de síolrad ír is éibí (Donnc. Ruad)*—Bring a blessing from my heart to the land of E. to all that are alive of the seed of Ir. and Eibhear. 3. *Beir leat tuac cúis púnt*—Bring with you £5 worth.

(c) 1. *Bíodar ag cosc na leanb ar teact cuige (CMO.*

362)—They were preventing the children from coming to Him. 2. *ná caillir oráinn*—Don't fail us. 3. *Do caill ar a misneac arís*—Her courage failed again. 4. *Níor éosam an ciúnas iad ar an asacán san* (CMO. 336)—Silence did not save them from this reproach.

(d) 1. *Caillfar a lán airgid leo san*—much money will be spent in vain on them. 2. *Do caitead cloca leo*—stones were thrown at them. 3. *Ná caite an iomao aimsire le neitib saogait*—don't spend too much time on worldly things. 4. *Cia hé doeirir do casaò leat* (also *ort*)?—Whom do you say you met? 5. *Ní buitse is cóir é casaò liom* (S.)—It isn't you who should cast it up to me. 6. *As casaò leis an nDá tráig a tabairt leis* (TBC. 76)—trying to serve the two strands. 7. *Shá casaò m' asacán le n-Íosa* (CMO. 340)—upbraiding Jesus for

(e) 1. *Do cinnead ar cómairle*—a plan was settled on. 2. *Do cinn air é leasad*—he failed to knock it down. 3. *Sur cinn ar mnáib a cóm-aimsire i sgéim* (K.)—until she surpassed in beauty all her contemporaries.

(f) 1. *Ní cuirfó sé suas lib* (bñ. 259)—He will not put up with you. 2. *Cuir síos ar*—talk about, describe. 3. *Cuir suas de*—give up. 4. *'Sé cúis a cuirfinn síos leis*—The reason I should assign for it is 5. *Cuir suas cum*—instigate to. 6. *Cuir cum*—attempt to. 7. *Cuir le*—send with, add to, apprentice; *do cuiread le céir é*—he was apprenticed to a trade. 8. *Cuir fios ar*—send for. 9. *Cuir fé*—settle down. 10. *Cuireadar burdean luict airm uata* (CMO. 301-2)—They dispatched an armed band. 11. *Cuir de*—get over (work, disease, trouble, etc.); cover space. 12. *Cuir díot*—be off; undress. 13. *Bí sé as cur de ar a díceatl*—he was talking away, as fast as he could. 14. *Tá sé as cur alluis de*—he's perspiring. 15. *Cuir tar*—put past (not suspect)—*ní cuirfinn tairis é*—I shouldn't put it past him (I'm inclined to suspect him of it). 16. *Cuir i leit*—accuse. “*Cá bfuil na daoine a bí as cur do' leit?*” (CMO. 306)—“Where are they who accused you?”

(g) 1. *Go gcuirighró an Rí leat*—May God assist you.
 2. *An té a cabruigeann leis féin, cabruigeann Dia leis*—
 God helps those who help themselves.

(h) 1. *Ní déanfaínn rúð ort*—I didn't do as you wished.
 2. *Tá sé ag déanamh amach ar a dhó*—it's coming up to two o'clock.
 3. *Do dheim sé anonn ar tAòg*—He went over to T.
 4. *Do dheimhó saḡart de*—he was ordained priest.
 5. *Dubairt sé leo neamh-súim a déanamh de neitib saogalta* (CMO. 245)—He told them to despise worldly things.
 6. *Ní dheimhann sé puinn taitige de*—he doesn't practise it much.

(i) 1. *Tá an uile dume aca tréis diúltú amuic 7 amach do dól cún cómraic donfir a déanamh, ar breib ná ar meallao* (TBC. 128)—Everyone of them has refused point-blank to go to fight in single combat, either for bribe or promise.
 2. *Do diúltuig sé mé ar sgillings*—he refused me ls.
 3. *Dioltaró tu as, luath nó mall*—you'll pay for it sooner or later.
 4. *An mór a díolais ar an mbuim?*—How much did you pay for the cow?
 5. *Cia leis gur díolais í?*—To whom did you sell her?
 6. *Cia dó gur . . . í?*—For whom did you sell her?

(j) 1. *Éirig as*—resign, give up.
 2. *Caó d'éirig dó?*—What happened him?
 3. *Conus d'éirig le Séadna?*—How did it fare with S.?
 4. *Níorb' fada gur éirig eatorca*—Soon they had a row.
 5. *Éirig a coilaó*—go to bed.
 6. *Ní éireocao sé díob* (BN. 28)—He kept on importuning them.
 7. *Is amlaró a d'éirigeadar cuige* (BN. 28)—The result was, they attacked him.

(k) 1. *Éist le fuaim na h-abann 7 geobairó tú breac*—Listen to the murmur of the river, and you'll get a trout! (Also *feit le fuaim*).
 2. *Nuair a h-eitigeadó iao ar an lóisoin* (CMO. 297)—When they were refused the lodging.
Níor maic liom é eiteac ar rúð cóm suarac—I shouldn't like to refuse him such a paltry thing.
 3. *Fan ort (leat) go fóil*—wait a while (the preps. are intensive): *D'fanfaimis leat (S.)*—we'd have waited for you: *measadar . . . go mb' féoir ná fanfaó sé ar an bprocal adubairt sé ar dtúis* (CMO. 309)—They thought that possibly he might not stand

by his first account. 4. *Go b'póiriró Dia ort*—God help you : *féad, 7 póir sinn, a tigearna*—Look, o Lord, and save us. 5. *fás fúmsa é*—leave it to me (to decide); *fás aghamsa é*—leave it to me (to keep); *o'fás sé an gleann 'sa raib ann agham*—he left me master of the situation. 6. *fiafrócar díot cár córlaís aréir*—you'll be asked where you slept last night : *larr ar Dia don trí guróe is toil leat, 7 geobair iad (S.)*—ask of God any three wishes you like, and you shall have them.

(l) 1. *Tá sé ag gabáil do'n gcolúnn le fada*—he has been at Irish for a long time. 2. *Geobair sé o'fuipeanaib ort*—he will whip you. 3. *Do gáib sé le filróaict*—he took to poetry. 4. *Do gáib sé a leat-sgeál liom*—he excused himself to me. 5. *Gabaim pároun aghat*—excuse me. 6. *Imtís leat (ort)*—be off, go on. *Conus o'imtís le S?*—How did it fare with S.? *Tá an buairt úo imtísce díom*—that worry has left me : *O'imtís a bean uairó moé*—his wife left him yesterday.

(m) 1. *Do lean a gcosa de'n líc-oigre*—their feet stuck to the ice. 2. *Ná lean doo' cleasairóaict*—don't continue your tricks. *lean ort (leat)*—continue. 4. *Tá orm leanamaint siar ar an sceist*—I must probe the question thoroughly. 5. *Líon an corcán o'uisge*—fill the pot with water (the material) : *líon leis an gcupán é*—fill it with the cup (the instrument). 6. *Ná labair cum go labartar leat*—don't speak till you're spoken to : *Is air sin do labair an páiró*—it was of Him the prophet spoke : *an tir sin dar' labramur (ZCP. II, 276)*—this land of which we have spoken.

(n) 1. *Ná leis doo*—don't allow him. 2. *Ní leogfar . . . i n-aisge leis*—he will not get off with 3. *Más oic le muinntir na h-áite an tairb do leogaint uata (TBC. 11)*—If the inhabitants are loth to let the bull be taken from them. 4. *Ná leog ort*—don't pretend. 5. *Leog doo' baot-cáinnit feasda*—give up your foolish talk now.

(o) 1. *Mait dúinn ár gcionta*—forgive us our trespasses. 2. *Do méaduig ar an mbuairt aige*—his worries increased. 3. *Ní maoróte duit as do maitéas*—you needn't boast

of your goodness. 4. Is baoghlac nár sgar sé ar fógnaím leis (S.)—I'm afraid he didn't part with him to his advantage: ní féidir iad a sgaramaint ó n-a céile—they can't be separated.

(p) “Tá mo bean i gCill Créa go tréit, 7 leac le n-a ceann,

Má tá, ar nóm scaoil léi, ní baogal ná go bfan-
fáiró sí ann” —

“My wife's in C.C. all spent, with a stone by her head,

Well, then, just let her be—she's sure to remain there.”

2. An amlaíó nár ceart an ingean so Ábraham
do scaoilead ón gceangal san lá na Sabbóire? (CMO.
331)—Do you mean to say it was wrong to release this daughter of A. from that bondage on the Sabbath?

3. Do scaoil sé tairis mé—he took no notice of me.

4. Do scaoil sé uairó mé—he let me go without hindrance.

5. Scaoil cúgaimn an sgéal—let's have the story at once.

6. Scaoil cart an deoc—let the drink pass. 7. Do scaoil sé urcar fúm (orm, liom)—he shot at me.

(q) 1. Seasócad-sa ouit—I'll support you. 2. Tá oiread airgid agam 7 a seasócairó dom go ceann mí—I've as much money as will last me for a month. 3. Mo seasam inoiu craib (n.)—I depend on you to-day. 4. Bíod do seasam ionam (Im.)—depend upon Me.

(r) 1. Tugas druim láma le droc-beartaib—I turned my back on iniquity. 2. Do tabraim druim le scamatlaió an tsaoigail seo (Song)—I should turn away from the clouds of this life. 3. Ní féidir dá taob an sgéil do tabairt dá céile—the two sides of the story cannot be reconciled. 4. Tugtar cum a céile iad—let them be brought together. 5. Ní tabair dume uairó an nro nac bí aige (K.)—one does not give away what one has not. 6. Cad é an ainm ba maic leat a tabrfi ar an leanó?—By what name would you have the child called? 7. Tabair fé—make the attempt: tug sé fúm—he attacked me.

(s) 1. 'Do éuarò 'dà neart (TBC. 88)—his strength failed. 2. 'Do éuarò 'óiom é 'véanam—I failed to do it. 3. Annsan beirò onóir as 'dul 'duit ón 'scuiréactam (CMO. 336)—then honour will be due to you from the company. 4. 'Do tuis na h-uaisle go raib san as 'dul na tuis ar aigne na n'adame (CMO. 301)—the nobles realized that this was being impressed on the people's minds. 5. Ní ró-olc a rašad 'greas coúlata 'dom—I could do well with a little sleep. 6. 'Do rašad sé i 'tairbe 'duit go mór—it would do you a lot of good. 7. 'Do éuadais as go mór—you've failed a lot. 8. 'Do éuarò ann—it shrank. 9. Níl don 'dul as asat—you can't escape : níl don 'dul uarò asat—you can't escape him. 10. Téigean sí le na h-ačair—she resembles her father. 11. 'Do éuarò an cluice oramn—we lost the game. 12. 'Do éuarò as na trí Colla ortá (K.)—the three C.'s defeated them. 13. "Téigean an maonac ó 'dume go 'dume, mar téigean an t-éan ó bile go bile"—Yawning passes from one to another, as the bird passes from tree to tree. 14. 'Do rašad sé siú 'tre poll tarachair as lorg airšio—your friend would go through an auger-hole for money. 15. Níor šad 'óib 'dul čar an m'irbúilt sin cun a 'ó'feiscint go rašad 'dar cionntac (CMO. 311)—This miracle should have sufficed for them to see that they were guilty.

(t) 1. Ac níor čámis leo é marbú (CMO. 336)—but they did not succeed in killing him. 2. Čámis sé istead air—he became proficient in it. 3. Čámis sin istead go cruinn le n-a n'oubart fém—that fitted in exactly with what I said myself. 4. Čámis 'dume éigin laistis 'óiom sa šnó san—someone circumvented me in that affair. 5. 'Sé t'iočarò 'de go marbóčtar 'dume éigin—the result will be that someone will be killed. 6. Čámis Séadna 'dà f'eadamc—S. came to see him. 7. Ní fulair nó ní hí seo an čéad uair asat as aireactamc teact čairsi sin (S.)—This mustn't be the first time you've heard her mentioned. 8. Ó burom a čis bruigean—contention comes from company. 9. Čámis sí leis go h-éascarò—it offered no resistance. 10. Tis leis sin an méro 'dveir plató—what P. says agrees with that,

307.—(a) **ΔΣ**=when :—1. ΔΣ **φέααμτ** **το** **σνα** **η-Δσποιλ** (CMO. 275)—when the A. looked to see 2. ΔΣ **τράατ** **τό** **λεο** **αρ** **υιςγε** **σίλοέ** (CMO. 302)—when speaking o them about the waters of S.

(b) **Τρέις**=when :—1. Τρέις **αν** **πόαιλ** **σιν** **το** **ράο** **τό**, **το** **έρομ** **σέ** **αίρις** (CMO. 305)—when He had said these words He bent down again. 2. Τρέις **διαβλαίρεαατα** **έιγιν** **α** **όέανάμ** **ορτα**, **ευσ** **σέ** **έύίέι** **ίστεαέ** **ιαο** (S. 16)—when he had performed some black magic over them, he brought them in to her.

(c) **Αρ** **εαγλα**—for fear of—denotes the state or condition of the agent :—**λε** **η-εαγλα** denotes that the action was accompanied by fear in the agent : **ο'εαγλα** denotes that fear was the origin or motive of the action.

(d) **ι** **ζσιονν**—after—views the space of time from the beginning :—**Ραγαο** **α** **βαίτε** **ι** **ζσιονν** **μί**—I'll go home in a month's time : **τρέις** views the space of time from the end, backwards :—**έυας** **α** **βαίτε** **τρέις** **μί** **το** **έαιτεαμ** **ανν**—I went home, after having spent a month there.

(e) There is a similar distinction between **ζο** **εανν** and **αρ** **ρεαο**, both meaning “for the space of.” The former views it from the beginning, the latter from the end :—1. **Νί** **ραγαο** **ανν** **αρίς** **ζο** **εανν** **μί**—I shan't go again for a month. 2. **Ρανραο** **ανν** **αρ** **ρεαο** **αν** **μί**—I shall remain for the month.

(f) **ι** **ρίε**, and **ι** **ζσαιτεαμ** mean “at some time in the course of :—1. **Τιοεραο** **ίστεαέ** **έύγαι** **λά** **έιγιν** **ι** **ρίε** **να** **σεαάτμαμε**—I'll come in to you, some day during the week. 2. **Νίορ** **λαβair** **σέ** **πόατ** **ι** **ζσαιτεαμ** **αν** **μέρο** **σιν** **αμσίρε**—he never opened his lips during all that time.

CHAPTER IX.

SYNTAX OF THE SENTENCE.

308.—A.—Ellipsis and Change of Construction :—

The starting-point may be found in :—Ar ní derna aithrige, acht dul in derchainiud (PH. 221)—For he did not penance, but despaired. Here derna governs both aithrige and dul. But we must often assume an ellipsis. This occurs chiefly in :—(a) Adversative clauses with *ac*. (b) Non-adversative clauses with *agus*. (c) After *fé mar*, and *cóm maic agus* (d) In clauses following others with *má*, *óá*, *nuair*. (e) In other kinds of sentences :—

(a) *Níor leog sé doimniú air, ac an biaó do cáiteam cóm maic is ó'féad sé é* (S. 68)—He pretended nothing, but ate the food as well as he could. (After *ac*, supply “*is amháir a óem sé*” or “*is é ruó a óem sé.*” *Biaó*, A. or N.).

(b) *Cao na taoib nár labair sí 7 an sgéal go léir a ó'innsint óó?* (CMO. 37)—Why did she not speak and tell him the whole affair? After *7*, supply “*nár óem sí.*” *Sgéal* A. after *óem*. See also—CMO. 185, 94 ; Ser. 79 ; S. 76.

(c) 1. *Tuig na daoine gur labair sé fé mar a beaó cómaict aige* (CMO. 158)—The people felt that He spoke as one having power. After *fé mar*, supply—“*a labraíó óume go (mbeaó cómaict aige).*” The ellipsis following the omitted *go* is dropped. 2. Without ellipsis :—*Labrann isáias fáir fé mar a labraíó sé óá mbeaó sé ag féacaínt ar a páis 7 ar a bás* (CMO. 5)—The prophet I. speaks as if he had been an eye-witness of His passion and death. With ellipsis :—*fé mar a beaó sé* See also *lúc.* 40.

(d) *Ṫá neospí ṵí é, ⁊ annsan ṡo bpóspáṵ sí Séatna,* *ṵo ṽrispeáṵ ṁ máctnam ṁ sláinte* (S. 96)—If she were told it, and should then marry S., the thought of it would ruin her health. After *annsan*, supply—*ṵá ráimigeáṵ*, or *ṵá mba*. The clause *ṡo . . .* is N. to *ráimigeáṵ*, or *ba*. See also—CMO. 198, 46 ; S. 103, 96 ; ṡ. 145 ; TBC. 26 ; CCU. 98 ; bn. 409.

(e) 1. *Ṫá ṡác rí acu ṡá máoróeam ṡur ṡeallaṵ tusa ṵc fém, ác teáct ar an slóṡáṵ so* (TBC. 134)—Every one of the Kings is boasting that you were promised to him, provided he came on this hosting. After *ác*, supply “*ṡo nṵéanpáṵ sé.*” *Áct ṡo*—provided that.

309.—B.—Contamination and Other Phenomena :—

1. *Caṵ ba ṡáṵ an máit ṵo lot ?* (S.)—Where is the need to undo the good ?

(a) This might be a contamination of question and answer :—Q.—*Caṵ ba ṡáṵ ?* (Regular). A.—*An máit ṵo lot.*

(b) Or modelled on—*Caṵ ba ṡáṵ ṁ ṵéanam ?* (Regular).

(c) Or “*an máit ṵo lot*” may be a phrase-n. gov. by *ṡáṵ*.

(d) Or the “Sense Construction” principle may serve. *Caṵ ṵo ṵéarfaṵ an máit ṵo lot ?* or *Caṵ fé nṵéár an máit ṵo lot ?* (both regular) convey the same meaning.

310.—Many of the exx. in 223, G—where anteced. and rel. are both D. are best explained on this principle of Contamination :—

1° *Ṣarṵuigeáṵar an uile ruṵ i ṽfuirm ṵume ṵe slíoct ṡaeṵeal ṵár féaṵaṵar teáct suas leis* (ṡṡ. 54)—is a contamination of :—(a) *an uile ruṵ ṵár féaṵaṵar*, and (b) *an uile ruṵ ṡur féaṵaṵar teáct suas leis*. The expansion of the compd. rel. into anteced. and rel. is unsatisfactory. One would expect “*leo*” instead of “*leis.*”

2° *Ṣráṵmar ṵar ṡác nṵṵ ṵár ṵuṡ ṵume ṡráṵ ṵó riam fós* (Im. 248)—is a contamination of—(a) *ṡác nṵṵ ṡur ṵuṡ ṵume ṡráṵ ṵó riam fós* ; and (b) *ṡác nṵṵ ṵár ṡráṵuṡ ṵume fós*. Expansion of the compd. rel. would require

‘óóib instead of ‘óó.—‘sac níb ‘óíob-san gur tug buine ‘sráó ‘óóib riam fós.

3° ‘táinig amac as an loc an capall ‘dob’ áilne ‘dár leasas mo súil riam air (‘Or. 33)—is a contamination of—(a) an capall ‘dob’ áilne ‘d’á ‘breaca riam, and (b) an c. ‘dob’ áilne gur leasas mo súil riam air. Here again, expansion of the compd. rel. would require or‘ta instead of air.

311 (a) Níl leig‘eas ar an meactlú ac muinntir na h-Éireann ‘do ‘dul 7 eolas a cur as a ‘scainnt féin airís (‘Sg. 84)—The only remedy for the degeneracy is for the people of I. to go and re-learn their own language. If the construction had been uniform, we should have had—m. na h-É. ‘do ‘dul 7 ‘do cur eolais. . . . The sentence is a contamination of this, and—níl ac ‘go noéan‘fáó m. na hÉ. ‘dul 7 eolas a cur

(b) Ní raib don tsli‘ge cuige ac muinntir na hÉireann ‘do cur le céile 7 a neart ‘go léir ‘o’iompáil i ‘scomnib na n‘gall (‘AR. 64)—There was no way for it, but that the I. people should pull together, and turn their united strength against the Foreigner. A contamination of :—(a) m. na h-É ‘do cur le c., 7 ‘o’iompáil a mrt ‘go léir . . . and (b) ac ‘go noéan‘fáó m. na hÉ. cur le c., 7 a neart ‘go léir. . . .

(c) Nuair a bí oiread amuic aise 7 gur ‘óóic leo ‘go noíultó‘cáó an curó eile ‘o’é ‘óíol ‘tar a ceann, ‘do comáinead‘ar an ‘olige ar siúbal (msp. 26)—When he had spent so much that they believed the others would refuse to pay up for him, they instituted legal proceedings. A contamination of—(a) bí oiread san amuic aise gur ‘óóic leo and (b) ní raib oiread san amuic aise 7 ba ‘óóic leo.

(d) Nárb’ fúlair é féin a ‘dul ‘go Ierúsalem 7 mórán ‘o’fulang (‘CS. 46)—That He must go to J. and suffer many things.—A contamination of (a) é féin a ‘dul 7 a ‘o’fulang ; and (b) nárb’ fúlair ‘do féin ‘dul 7 mórán a ‘o’f.

(e) Multiple Rel. Construction is a sort of contamination :—Is iad is tréme atá as ‘deanam na hoibre—They

are doing the work most zealously—is a contamination of :—(a) *is* *is* *is* *is* and (b) *is* *is* *is* *is* *is* *is*.

(f) The use of *ná*, *ac*, *mar* in Identification sentences, Type II, b, c, d, is also a sort of contamination. E.g., *is é is fearra duit ná duit 7 greams a coitla duit féin*, is a contamination of :—1. *is é is fearra duit duit* and 2. *ní fearra duit ruo a d'éanfa ná duit*

(g) “*agus*” is often due to contamination :—*bí ionghna orm a fheadas is do d'eim sé an gnó*—is a contamination of—1. *bí a fheadas a d'eim* and 2. *bí com'mait is a d'eim*

(h) *bí uirri a teact pé ar bit céard a tiorad as* (SmB. 35)—She had to come whatever the result might be.—A contamination of :—1. *pé ar bit ruo a tiorad as* ; and 2. *ba cuma céard a tiorad as*.

(i) *pé ar bit cé an galair bí as gabáil don gluaisteán* (SmB. 108)—Whatever malady affected the motor.—A contamination of :—1. *pé ar bit galair bí* and 2. *ba cuma cé'n galair bí*

(j) *pé ar bit cé'n coir atá déanta asat* (SmB. 164)—Whatever crime you have committed.—A contamination of :—1. *pé ar bit coir atá* and 2. *is cuma cé'n coir atá*

312 (a) In “*breis agus*,” more than, and “*ionann agus*,” the same as, *agus* has developed a new meaning :—1. *Tá breis is mó d'ócáin airgid agam*—I have more than enough money—goes back to—*tá mo d'ócáin a. agam 7 breis*. Similarly—*is ionann 7 bás an beata so*—this life is a sort of death < *is ionann an beata so 7 bás*.

(b) *munab ionann agus*—is always elliptical :—1. *Táim réir anois munab ionann is riam (S.)*—I'm done for now, if ever I was.=*Táim réir anois munab ionann (anois) 7 riam*. 2. *Do d'eim sé an teagas mar a d'éanfa dume go raib com'act aige, munarb ionann is na scríbe-neoirí 7 na fairisínis (CS. 19)*—He taught as one having power, as compared with the S. and Ph. < *munarb ionann (é féin) is*

(c) 1. *ní níú biorán is é*—It is insignificant.—Instead of saying “it is not worth a pin,” a pin (a type of the insignificant) and it (the thing in question) are put

together, and the statement is made about the combination. So—2. *Níorb'fíú leo bíorán 7 anam dume* (S. 221)—They cared nothing whatever about a human life.

(d) In “*nó go*,” until, *nó* has originated in much the same way as *nó* in “*ní fúláir nó*.”—1. *Dubairt sé go bfanfað sé ann go bfuigeað sé bás, nó go dtiocfað dume éigin gá fuasgaíl*—He said he would stay until he died, or until someone came to save him. Omitting the first *go*-clause, we get, with illogical retention of *nó*—*Dubairt sé go bfanfað sé nó go dtiocfað*. . . . 2. Or it might have developed more simply thus:—*Dubairt sé go bfanfað sé ann, nó go dtiocfað*. . . . He said he would stay, or else that someone would come. This would easily lead to:—He said he would stay till someone came.

313.—C.—Repetition of Words :—

1. Repetition often implies emphasis :—(a) *Tuḡ sé ciall dóib 7 tuigim, 7 tuḡ sé dóib saor-toil* (CMO. 1)—He gave them sense and understanding, and over and above these, free-will. (b) *O'fuilís íosa an páis ear ceann na cine daonna, le gráð do'n cine daonna, 7 do tós an páis sin de'n cine daonna an easgaine do bí curta as an bpeaca ar an gcine daonna*. (CMO. 48)—J. suffered His passion for the human race, out of love for the human race, and this passion released the human race from the curse which sin had laid upon the human race. Here the repetition is most effective. It is a solemn reminder of the universality of the sin-curse, and of the beneficent effects of Redemption.

2. When the Projected N. occurs, a pron. takes its place where the subj. (or pred. in *is* sentences) would normally be :—(a) *An té mactnócað air is dóic liom go dtuigfeað sé* (MSF. 206)—I think anyone who reflected would understand. . . . Here, if the Projected N. were not used, too many words would intervene between *tuigfeað* and its object. (b) *An bean cos-noctaite is í a bí ann* (S.)—It was none other than the bare-footed woman (í essential, in order to avoid VS !).

3. Both the vb. and the subj. (in pron. form) are repeated, when a clause or phrase qualifying the subj. or obj. intervenes :—(a) between a trans. vb. and its obj. (b) between an intrans. vb. and the complement of the pred.—(a) *‘Oo tós an fear n-a raib an gunna ’na lám aige, ‘oo tós sé an gunna le spórt* (MSF. 27)—The man who held the gun raised it in sport. (b) *‘Cuair an tóme ‘oo leigiseaó cuair sé suas go tóí an teampul* (CMO. 183)—The man who had been cured went up to the Temple.

4 Sometimes the vb. is repeated in the pl., or with a preceding particle :—(a) *‘Bí ‘daome, ms na h-áiteanaib a bí i bpaó ó Ierúsalem, bíodar as tosnú ar iad féin a cur i ttreo taistil* (CMO. 295)—People in places far from J. were beginning to prepare for the journey. (b) *‘Dá n-abramn-se leis na fearaib úo a táinig cúgam an oíche uo, ‘já iarraib orm beic am’ stiúrtóir orca, ‘dá n-abramn ná féarfaim é* (MSF. 170)—Had I said to the men who came to me that night, asking me to guide them—had I said that I couldn’t. . . .

5. A word is repeated sometimes to avoid vagueness and ambiguity.—*‘Bí a croidé lán de ‘droc-aigne, ac coimeaó sé istig an ‘droc-aigne* (CMO. 58)—His heart was full of evil thoughts, but he kept these evil thoughts concealed.

314.—D.—Order of Words :—1. For departures from the normal order, see 309-313. 2. With vbs. other than *is*, the normal order is vb., subj., complement of pred. But often the whole pred. must come first, the subj. coming last :—(a) *‘Oo tlocpaó orca an bás a ‘geall Dia ‘óib* (CMO. 1)—The death with which God had threatened them would come upon them. K.’s prose sometimes ignores this device for securing lucidity :—(b) *‘Go tcarla an tsoileac céana lér léig mac na baintreabcaíoe a rún ‘óo* (Bk. 2)—Until he met the same willow to which the widow’s son had confided his secret. (Better put *‘óo* immediately after *carla*). (c) Or the logical subj. comes first :—*An t-uise a ‘abrfao-sa ‘óo, ‘éanfaio tobar uise de istig ann, as fíaraó cun beata síoruroe* (CMO. 148)—The water I will give him shall

become a well within him springing up to life everlasting. *An t-uisge* is abs. The grammatical subj. is *to barr*. (d) In emphatic *is* sentences, where the pred. is indefinite, it is projected (231). (e) In emphatic *is* sentences, where the pred. is definite, it may come either first (Types IV, V., XI.), or last (Types II, III, IX).

315.—E.—Simile and Metaphor :—

1. K. uses metaphor freely :—(a) *Ceirín do gac créadct an crábadó* (TBB. 64)—Piety is a salve for every wound. Spiritual failings are compared to bodily wounds, which facilitates the otherwise bold statement that piety is “a healing plaster.” (b) *luib-leigeas do gac lot an lóir-ghníom* (TBB. 64)—Satisfaction is a healing herb for every hurt. Note the alliteration, and see F.

2. In his bolder metaphors K. invariably prepares the way, by giving the fact or fable on which the metaphor is founded :—

(a) *Re triall tar lear luat-tonnac na loctó* (TBB. 22)—while journeying over the swift-waved sea of sin. Here, and in the metaphors which follow, there was a previous reference to “frail earthen vessels sailing on stormy seas in the darkness of the night.” Hence :—(b) *bóina na beadaó tadail*—the ocean of this material life. (c) *oróce na h-urcóroce*—the night of iniquity. (d) *rá doilb-CEO dubáilce 7 droc-rúm*—under the darksome fog of vice and ill-will. (d) *go cuan a críce déirdeanaige i gcurracán criad na colna*—to the haven of his last end, in the earthy skiff of the flesh. (e) *lám-óee na loct do leonad 7 do laoraó le h-óro na h-aicrige ar leic tuim an lóir-ghníoma* (TBB. 24)—to wound and mangle the idols of our vices with the hammer of repentance on the bare anvil of satisfaction.

The alliteration in these exx. may be taken as a symbol of the comparison involved in every metaphor, and this symbolic function is a justification of the artifice, when kept within due bounds. See F.

3.—Modern prose writers use metaphor more sparingly, especially if the comparison involved is strange. Where

English has a metaphor, I. will :—(a) have no metaphor at all ; or it will be “toned down.” (b) there will be a different metaphor. (c) there will be a definitely stated metaphor, instead of allusiveness of English; or, instead of a metaphor, a simile :—

(a) 1 revealing her noble graceful hull (Wreck of the Grosvenor)—*oo gēibctī raðarc ar aðmado a sleasa*. 2. who strain their eyes—*atá ag fāire go olúct*. 3. forging new implements—*stigte nua aicī 'á gceapad*.

(b) The fulness of his heart would not suffer him to eat a morsel—*bí toct cóm trom san ar a croidē ná leogfad sé dō pīoc d'ite*.

(c) 1. icy temper—*dā méro doiceall ḡ duairceas a bí air*. 2. the gay butterflies—*is cuma nó perleacáin iad*.

4. Where the metaphor would seem crude, it is toned down by such clauses as—*mar a véarfá*—so to speak ; *dar leat*—one would think ; or *tá* is used, +m+a G. pron., instead of a downright predication with *is* :—

(a) *b'uatbás, mar a véarfá, a gníom*—Her deed was, if I may put it so, a terror. (b) *ba cuma nó splann, dar leat, a gníom*—his deed, if I may say so, was as a lightning flash. (c) *ní bead mo ceann na cloic, ná mo croidē na croidē me, mar atá*—I should not have a head of stone, nor a heart of fire, as I have.

316.—F.—Hendiadys, and Alliterative Doublets :—

Alliteration symbolizes the unity of idea involved in Hendiadys, i.e., the vivid expression of a single idea by two or more words representing facets of that idea :—

1. *Bí ualac ar m'aigne, ḡ sgeit ḡ sgeon am' croidē* (TBC. 133)—There was a load on my mind and fright and terror in my heart. 2. *Tá tuirse ḡ troma-croidē orm* (TBC. 148)—I'm weary and heavy of heart. 3. *Ní beal san binneas é* (TBC. 91)—His mouth is a mouth of melody. 4. *San cnead san créact air* (TBC. 160)—absolutely unwounded.

317.—G.—Illogical Elements in Construction :—

1. *Níl doimne is fearr go bfuil a fīos san aige ná aige fēm* (CMO. 309)—No one knows better than him-

self. Here, instead of *aige féin*, we should expect *é féin*, as the sentence is a combination of :—(a) *níl doimne is fearr ná é féin*. (b) *níl doimne go bfuil 'fios san aige*.

2. Cf. the exx. under Contamination, 309, and the retention of *nó*, in *ní putáir nó*, and in *nó go=until* (312, d).

3. Cf. also the use of the copula with verbal forms :—(a) *bá dóbair dom tuitim*—I almost fell. (b) *b'fáctas dom* (Conn.)—It seemed to me. (c) *is féas dom*—I know.

318.—H.—Chiastic Construction :—

Bí cumas ar ceangal 7 ar scaoile, ar neamh 7 ar talamh, geallta dó ; 7 bí geallta dó ná buaíodh geataí írinn ar an eaglais sin (CMO. 278)—The power of binding and loosing, in heaven and on earth, had been promised him, and there had been promised him that the gates of Hell should not prevail against the Church.

319.—I.—Progressive Forms :—

1. often prefers the progressive forms, with *tá*, where English has no vb. to be :—1. *is móire mo mian é clos tusa beic gá ráð san liom* (fSA.)—I desire to hear it all the more, since you tell me this. 2. *Bí an t-athair do' iarrad é cur cun suaimnis* (CMO. 341)—The father tried to soothe him. 3. *Sé gnó an tsagairt beic as cur a guróe suas*—It is the priest's business to pray.

320.—J.—Irish objective rather than subjective :—

1. *bá greammhar an sgéal é*—We have thus the singular spectacle. 2. In the case of Dublin we have seen the conflict. . . .—*Do d'eim muinntir bláit cliait a noiceall cum. . . .*

321.—K.—Irish concrete rather than abstract :—

1. "the excellencies of full-bodied narrative"—*innsint a cur air a beaó ar feabhas 7 ar áilneacht 7 ar cruinneas*. 2. "the onward sweep of events"—*gníomh á d'éanamh i noiadó gníomh*. 3. "the calm and chastity

of the pauses of Fate"—*ḡaḡ níð na stao, 7 an éinneamhaint aḡ féaḡaint anuas orḡa ḡo neamh-fuaḡoraḡ 7 ḡo neamh-cuiseaḡ.*

322.—Difference of Colouring :—

1. Less highly-coloured than English :—(a) "without taking this precaution"—*m' éaḡmuís sin.* (b) "alive with children"—*lán an bḡaill bḡaillḡḡe ann.* (c) "basket-chairs"—*na caḡaoireaḡa móra leaḡana.* (d) "flaming sword"—*claiḡeamh noḡḡaḡe.* (e) "children of Taliesin and Ossian"—*clann na bḡeaḡame bḡḡe, 7 ḡaeḡil na n-éireann.*

2. I. more highly-coloured than E.—(a) "of the utmost beauty"—*ar áilneaḡt an ḡomam (ar aḡeas na crumne).* (b) "generation after generation"—*na seaḡt steaḡḡa.* (c) "the greater delicacy and spirituality"—*an blas úḡ ar áilneaḡt 7 ar uaḡsteaḡt 7 ar spioraḡaḡḡaḡt.* (d) "as she went over to starboard"—*nuair a luaisḡḡi í ḡeiseal le trume níḡt na ḡaoḡe.* (e) "I don't know in the world"—*ní feaḡar ó cúḡ áḡḡaḡ na naoi ḡḡionn (S.).* (f) "exquisite"—*álumn ḡar na beaḡḡaḡ.*

PART IV.

PROSODY.

323.—Irish metres are either syllabic or accentual. The former developed from the L. hymns of the 5th and 6th centuries (*Thurn.*), and most I. poetry, between the 8th and the 17th centuries, was written in one or other of the many varieties (there were more than seventy!). The accentual metres were introduced about the end of the 16th century, under the influence of English poetry.

SYLLABIC METRES.

324.—*Dán Díreac* :—

A. *Deibróe* :—*Lit.* “cut in two” <de composition form of *do*, and *bithe*, part of O.I. *benaid*, cuts, etc. The metre was so called, because the couplets (except in *D. imrimn*) do not rhyme or assonate, as they do in the other syllabic metres. The rules of *Deibróe* are :—

1° Four lines (*ceatramam*) in each stanza (*rann*). The first couplet is the *seolao* (*leat-rann tosaig*), the second the *cómao* (*leat-rann deirre*).

2° Seven syllables in each line. (Elision to be reckoned with).

3° *Cómaroao*—rhyme or assonance between the last word of each of the odd lines and the last word of the even lines. The initial consonant of the *Rimn* (see 4°) is neglected, but the vowels must agree with those of the rhyming portion of the *Áiror-rimn*, and the following consonants must be of the same class.

The consonants are divided thus :—(a) S (the Queen of consonants) stands alone. (b) The breath stops—p, t, c. (c) The voiced stops—b, d, g. (d) The breath

continuant—ph (p, f), t (older th), c. (e) The voiced continuants—b, v, g, l, m, r; and n. (f) The double consonants—ll, m (O.I. mm mb) nn rr; and ng. When the consonants are of the same class the *cómard* is *slán*; otherwise *briste*.

4° *Rinn* and *Áir-rinn*.—I.e., the final words of ll. 2 and 4 (*Áir-rinn*) must have at least (and in the strictest *Deibre*, at most) one syllable more than the final words in ll. 1 and 3 (*Rinn*). The rhyme in *Deibre* is un-rhythmical, for, while the *rinn* is stressed, the rhyming part of the *Áir-rinn* is unstressed.

5° *Uaim*=Alliteration :—(a) Any init. vowel alliterates with any other init. vowel. (b) Any consonant alliterates with the same consonant, or its aspirated or eclipsed form. (c) But p alliterates only with f or p (not p). When init. f is aspirated, it is the following sound that alliterates :—*Tagair leam, a fílaic lfe*—Prove to me, O Lord of Liffey (l : l). ts strictly alliterates only with ts, and s only with s. (d) Only unstressed words may stand between alliterating words. When these latter are the last stressed words in the l., we have *fíor-uaim*, or *uaim cluaise*. Otherwise, *uaim gnúise*, or *uaim súla*, or *cúl-uaim*.

6° *Uaitne*—Union or vowel-concord :—(a) Between the word in caesura (I.e., the final word of the odd lines) and a word in the 2nd l. of the couplet. This is called *Áicill* (Anticipation), and is obligatory in the *cómard* of most non-*Deibre* metres, when the word in caesura does not consonate with the end-rhyme. *Áicill* may be *amus* (7°). (b) Between any word in the 1st l. and any word in the 2nd l. of the couplet. It is sufficient if the vowels are both broad or both slender.

7° *Amus* :—Vowel and consonant correspondence between a word in the odd lines, and a word of the same number of syllables in the even ll. The vowels should be the same, the consonants of the same class.

Ex.— *lomdā scéal maic ar múire*
fā moltar a míorbúile,
Do gēab ar an óig n-íodam
Scéal as cóir do cretíomam (AÓD, 56)—

Many a good tale is told of M., in which her wonders are extolled ; I will tell of the pure Virgin, A tale worthy of credit.

Observe :—1. Four ll. of 7 syllables. 2. *Cómaro do slán* :—*Muire* : *míorbuite* (r : l), and *io do am* : *creio-íom am* (o : m). 3. *Rinn* and *áir do rinn*. 4. *Uaim cluaise* : *maic*, *Muire* ; *molcar*, *míorbuite* ; *óig*, *n-io do am* (n- does not count) ; *cóir*, *creioíom am*. 5. *Amus* :—*óig* : *cóir* (g : r) ; *géab* : *scéal* (b : l).

bátt do (Elision) :—When a word ending in a vowel is followed by a word beginning with a short vowel, the latter is generally elided. Thus :—*fa do an tréimse atá síse* (KP. 62)—here the *a* of *an*, and of *atá* are both elided. Hiatus is sometimes allowed :—*No do an fa ca beola eic*—Never have I seen any horse's mouth.

B.—Rannai geact mór :—1. The stanza = 7ⁱ, 7ⁱ, 7ⁱ, 7ⁱ (7ⁱ × 4). 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. There is generally *uaim*, *uaitne*, *amus*.

Exx. (a) *Cé do am lu do lú do as tar ord*
1 *lorg deamna*, *oio gal gar*,
Cé do am ro-šai b sainnt um saic
Cé do am ro-braic íosa n-ard (Cf. PIM. 13)—

Observe :—1. *Cómaro do slán* :—*gar* : *n-ard* (g : o ; both vowels short). 2. *Amus* :—*ord* : *lorg* (monosyllable—o : g) ; *saic* : *braic* (ro- does not count). This latter is *Δicill*—obligatory, as *saic* and *ard* do not rhyme. 3. *Uaim* absent in l. 1, if the 1 of *lú do as* is consonantal ; *Uaim gnúise* :—*deamna* : *oio gal*. *Fior-uaim* :—*sainnt* : *saic* ; *íosa* : *n-ard* (n- does not interfere).

(b) *Deacair teact ó gal ar grá do*,
An gal ar dom-car fá éiac,
Ní bí an gal ar san goim bróm,
Gal ar nac fóir luib ná liaig (pp. 31)—

Hard to escape from love's disease, The disease that hath settled me in sorrow ; It lacketh not the wound of grief, Nor can be eased by herb or leech.

Observe :—1. The *a* of *an* is elided (l. 3). 2. *Fior-uaim* :—*gal ar* : *grá do* ; *dom-car* : *éiac* (*dom-* does not count) ; *luib* : *liaig*. 3. *Uaim gnúise* : *gal ar* : *goim*.

4. Διcιtl :—bróm : fóir (amus). 5. The rhyme cīac : uīaīg is not good. c and g do not belong to the same class. The diphthongs also disagree.

C.—Rannaigeačt mór šairio (=3¹+3 (7¹)) :—

Δ Rī rionn,

šrō vub mo teac nō šrō fionn,

noča n-iaōfaiōear fri neac

nār¹ iaōa Crīost Δ teac friom (Cf. PIM. 14)

O King of stars, Whether my house be dark or light,
It shall not be closed against anyone, Lest Christ close
His against me.

Observe :—1. uaim absent except in l. 1. The rhymes rionn : fionn : friom compensate somewhat. 2. Διcιtl :—neac : teac. 3. Cómardāō slān :—rionn : fionn : friom. 4. nār¹=lest ; iaōa, 3 sg. pres. Subj.

D.—Rannaigeačt ūeas :—1. Stanza=7², 7², 7², 7²=7²×4. 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. Generally uaim, uaitne, amus.

Ex.—Δ Eamain ioōnac doibinn,

Δs Δ fīōōrāō aīō-fērōim,

is mór noīne vōō' šualaimn

Ro-šaiō rīge for ēirinn (Cf. PIM. 13)—

Pleasant Emania, full of ranked hosts, Whose woods I
tell of, Many a generation from your shoulder has
obtained Kingship over Ireland.

Observe :—1. uaim only in :—ioōnac : doibinn ; fīōōrāō : fērōim (aīō- does not count). The uaim in šualaimn : šaiō may be intentional. 2. uaitne :—ioōnac : fīōōrāō (not amus, as c and v are in different classes). 3. Διcιtl absent in the cōmāō, though there is amus—noīne : rīge (n : g). 4. No elision in l. 1. 5. Cómardāō slān :—fērōim : ēirinn. 6. mór is neut. Hence the eclipsis. vōīne is G. pl.

E.—Rannaigeačt ūeas šairio (3²+3(7²)) :—

Corp sleamān

Δsus taōō fāōa reamān,

vērō an colann Δs loōāō

is an t-anam Δs vōeamān (Cf. PIM. 14)—

Nearly all characteristics absent, except the requisite no. of ll. and syllables, and the end-rhymes. These latter make up, to some extent, for the absence of the other essentials. In the older version there was *uaitne* :—*cholainn* : *anim*.

F.—**SÉADNAÖ (SÉADRAÖ)** :—Derived from *séad*, path (or *séad*, jewel) and an old generic word for “metre,” *nath*. *SÉADRAÖ* has the collective or abstract suffix—*raö*.—1. The stanza= $8^2, 7^1, 8^2, 7^1$. 2. The couplets rhyme. 3. *uaim* obligatory between last stressed word of l. 1, and the 1st stressed word of l. 2. 4. *uaitne* or *amus*, or both. 5. *Δicilt*—between final word of l. 3, and the 2nd last stressed word of l. 4. 6. *Ceann*—the final word of ll. 2, 4, is monosyllabic.

CLANN ISRAÉL UAIR SAN ÉIGIPT
 FA ANBRURO NIRT NÁMAÖ DÉ,
 SO MBRIOCT NGLEISIOMLÁIN NGEAS NDOORCA,
 ÉISIOMLÁIR DEAS TOLCA TÉ (Haic. 85)—

The children of I. of old in E., Under dire oppression
 from God's enemies, With fully prepared magic of dark
 spells Were a pretty exemplar of Ireland.

Observe :—1. *ƒior-uaim* :—*uair* : *Éigipt* ; *Tolca* : *Té*.
 2. *uaim gnuise* :—*nirt* : *námaö* ; *ngleisiomlám* : *ngeas*.
 3. The special *uaim* in ll. 1, 2 :—*Éigipt* : *anbruro*.
 4. *Cómarraö stán* :—*Dé* : *Té*. 5. *Amus* :—*ngleisiomlám* :
éisiomláir ; *ngeas* : *deas* ; *ndoorca* : *tolca* (This last
 is the obligatory *Δicilt*). 6. Hiatus in l. 2. 7. *Ceann* :—
 Final word in ll. 2, 4 is monosyllabic.

G.—**DEACNAÖ BEAS** :—1. Stanza= 4×5^1 . 2. Rhyming couplets. 3. *uaim*, *uaitne*, *amus*.

BAC SAC BEART NAC BUAN,
 NÍ CUAN SO CUAN DÉ,
 ÍOSA IS LÁIRE LUAM,
 TRUAŞ NÁ TOŞAS É !

Foolish each deed that perishes, There is no haven save
 God's, Jesus is the stoutest Pilot, Pity that chooseth
 Him not.

Observe :—1. *ƒior-uaim* in ll. 1, 3 ; *uaim gnuise* in
 ll. 2, 4. 2. *Cómarraö stán* :—*Dé* : *É*. 3. Elision of 1

of is in 1. 3. 4. *coḡas* is dissyllabic. 5. *Διcιλλ* in both couplets.

H.—**Deačnað mór** :—1. Stanza= 8^2 , 6^2 , 8^2 , 6^2 . 2. Couplets rhyme. 3. *uaim*, *uaične* or *amus*, or both. 4. *Διcιλλ* not obligatory.

ƿearḡ an Coimheas re cloinn Áðaim,

Toirneas roinn a rúin-nim,

Ní iomra òúnn in-ar nðaoimib

ḡan túr ðiomra an ðúilim (O'D. 22)—

May the Lord's wrath with Adam's children, His bitterness against us decrease ; not many of us men but merit the Creator's anger.

Observe :—1. *Cómarðas slán* :—*rúin-nim* : *ðúilim*.—Consonants of class (f), when preceded by a long vowel, may rank with class (e) (ISP. 5) ; hence the double n does not spoil the rhyme. 2. *amus* :—*cloinn* : *roinn* ; *Coimheas* : *toirneas* ; *iomra* : *ðiomra*. 3. *uaim ḡnúise* in l. 1 ; *ƿior uaim* in the others. 4. *uaične* :—*òúnn* : *túr* (Or *amus* acc. to 1. above). 5. No *Διcιλλ*. 6. The *a* of *an* is elided in l. 4.

I.—**Cas-òáinne** :—“ Twisted (complex) Bardic Art ” :—1. Stanza= 4 (7^3). 2. Couplets rhyme. 3. *uaim*, *uaične*, *amus*.

Óiol molta maor tiḡearna

Ní maor so nað soḡarma,

ƿiú maor múir mo tiḡearna

Na easò òúim ní ðolabra (A.O'D. 35)—

Worthy of praise is the Lord's Steward, No steward this that cannot be called upon ! The Steward of my Lord's castle deserves That I should find it easy to tell of him.

Observe :—1. Seven syllables in each l. with trisyllabic verse-ends. 2. *uaim-ḡnúise* :—*molta* : *maor* ; *maor* : *múir*. *ƿior-uaim* :—*so* : *soḡarma* ; *òúim* : *ðolabra*. 3. *Cómarðas slán* :—*soḡarma* : *ðolabra*. 4. *amus* :—*maor* : *easò* ; *múir* : *òúim*. 5. No *Διcιλλ*.

J.—**Rionnaire** :—1. Stanza= 4 (6^2). 2. Couplets rhyme. 3. *uaim*, *uaične*, *amus*. 4. *Διcιλλ* frequent, though not always, in the *cómað*.

SÉAN, A CRÍOST, mo LABRA,

A COMRÓE SEACHT NÍME,

RO-M-BEIRTEAR BUAIÓ LÉIRE

A RÍ GRÉINE GILE (P.O. Prol. 1-4)—

Bless, O Christ, my speech, O Lord of seven heavens,
Let the guerdon of devotion be given to me, O King
of the white sun.

Observe :—1. Six syllables in each l. with dissyllabic verse-ends. 2. COMARÓD SLÁN :—níme : gile. 3. UAIM GNÚISE :—beirtear (ro-m- does not count) : buaió. 4. FÍOR-UAIM :—gréine : gile. 5. AMUS (and AICILL) :—léire : gréine.

ACCENTUAL METRES.

325.—General conditions :—(a) The feet are measured from stress to stress, one stress often governing several syllables, so that a foot may contain one, two or more syllables. (b) In elision, the unaccented vowel is elided; if both are unaccented and both short, either may be elided. (c) UAIM is common enough. (d) Unaccented syllables before the first stress are called the “*ruṭas*.” (e) Internal and end rhymes will be noted in each species.

A.—**LAOI** (LAOÍD ; l. *fiannaróeacṭa*) :—This represents a transition stage between the old syllabic, and the later accentual metres.

Note :—1. Four-lined stanzas. 2. Three or four stresses in each line. 3. The no. of syllables varies from 6 to 9. 4. Rhyming couplets. 5. Internal rhyme in each couplet like AICILL in most non-*Deibróe* metres. 6. There is not the same regulated stress in the LAOI as there is in the other accentual metres. Examples :—

(a) A OISÍN UASAIL, A MÍC AN RÍOḠ
‘Dob’ fearr gníom gaisge agus gliaḋ,
Aicrís dúinn anois san mairḡ
Cionnus do mairís o’éis na bfiann (L.O.).

Observe :—1. The stresses are marked. 1. UAIM in ll. 1, 2. 3. The end-rhyme—gliaḋ : bfiann. 4. AICILL :—ríoḡ : gníom ; mair(1)ḡ : mairís.

- Ἡ δὲ μὴ τὰ ἡ-ὄλ τρεῖ θεῖα-ῖον (l.o.).

B.—**Rosc** :—Arranged, not in stanzas of uniform length, but in (generally unequal) sections, with short lines of two or three feet ; the accented vowel of the last foot being the same, in each section :—

Ḍuḇḏirt ṣan meḏḏḏl,

(a) $\begin{array}{c} \smile \\ \smile \end{array} \left| \begin{array}{c} o \smile \\ \hat{u} \smile \\ 1 \smile \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} \hat{i} \smile \\ \hat{i} \smile \\ \hat{i} \smile \end{array} \right.$

(b) $\begin{array}{c} \smile \\ \smile \end{array} \left| \begin{array}{c} ue \smile \\ \hat{o} \\ \Delta u \smile \\ e1 \smile \\ \hat{o} \smile \end{array} \right| \left| \begin{array}{c} \Delta \smile \smile \\ \Delta \smile \smile \\ \Delta \smile \smile \\ \Delta \smile \smile \\ \Delta \smile \smile \end{array} \right.$

C.—**CAOINEAD** (CUIREAM, MÀRBHA) :—CAOINEAD means elegy, but poems written in this metre have sometimes no connection with the dead. Ex. (b) below was launched against the Cromwellian settlers, but its prevailing tone is one of melancholy pathos. And elegies are sometimes written in other metres, e.g., ROSC. The structure is :—

1. Four-lined stanza. 2. Three or four feet in each line. 3. Last foot in each line has the same rhyme all through the poem. 4. The other stresses vary in each line or in each couplet. 5. But there must be assonance between two of these stresses in each line.

2. { Scíob léi síos mé trío na gleannra,
 { Cnuic báin búrde \bigcirc is go binn an teampaill (CmO.11)

The metre of the couplets is :—

1.—2 (\sim | ue \sim | ú \sim | ú \sim | á \sim).

2.—2 (\sim | i \sim | i \sim | i \sim | au \sim).

Observe :—1. Elision in ll. 1, 4. 2. Assonance between 2nd and 3rd feet in each couplet.

(b) Amrán fém :—1. Stanza=four ll. with uniform stresses in each. 2. Five feet in each line. 3. Two feet in the line assonate :—

Ó'm sceol ar áro-muig fáil ní corlam oíche,
 'S do breoir go brát mé dála \bigcirc a pobuil dílis,
 Trí ró \bigcirc fáda \bigcirc atáir 'na béal re broscar bíorbáir,
 Fá deoir gur fás a lán do'n cógal tríocha (KP. 19).

The metre is :—4 (\sim | ó \sim | á \sim | á \sim | o \sim | i \sim).

Observe :—1. Elision in ll. 2, 3. Ró-fáda atáir = róo atáir. 2. Assonance between 2nd and 3rd feet in each line.

(c) Four-footed line amrán, with uniform stresses in each line. Assonance either between the first two feet, or between the second and third. For Exx. see p. 5. 54-5, and compare with Caomear.

(d) Four-line amrán, with two systems of stress, or even three, the number of stresses varying somewhat :—

An fáir a bér éan 'san aer amuig,
 Is taicneam na gréme \bigcirc ar sléibcib mis,
 Seasfaí a bonn ar a talam go teann,
 Is ní leasfar a ceann le náire.

Three stress-systems here :—

(a) Lines 1, 2 :— \sim | á \sim | é \sim | é \sim | i (ü).

(b) Line 3 :— \sim | á \sim | ou \sim | á \sim | au

(c) „ 4 :— \sim | á \sim | au \sim | á \sim

Observe :—1. The stanza=2a+b+c. 2. The 2nd and 3rd feet in (a) assonate (é : é) in every stanza of the poem. 3. There is aicill úbalta between the end of (b) and the beginning of (c).—á \sim | ou \sim | á \sim | au. 4. No end-rhyme between (b) and (c), but the last foot

(of c) (á ~) is the same throughout the whole poem.
5. Elision in l. 2.

(e) Five-line *amrán*—the 5th l. being a refrain—the same in every stanza :—

Mo ghróirín go bráic tu, ~ a páistín óig,
Mar taoi'n tu buarta suaithe o'reoil,
Má tigeann tu liomsa geobair poitín is cóir,
Agus geobair tu duais nár luadad leat fós,
Agus seó leo toil is ná soil go fóil. (Máire Buidé
ní Laoḡaire).

The metre is :—

1.	~		oi ~		á ~		á		ó
2.	~		i ~		ua ~		ua ~		ó
3.	~		i ~		o ~		o ~		ó
4.	~		ó ~		ua ~		ua ~		ó
5.	~		ó ~		o ~		o ~		ó

Observe :—1. *Rutag* in every l., and last foot monosyllabic. 2. The two middle feet in each l. assonate.

(f) *Amrán* with eight-line stanzas :—

1° *An Rabcán* :—(a) Eight lines of three feet each, the odd and even ll. respectively having the same stresses in the same order. (b) *Δicill* in each couplet.—

Atá mo córaio san fuicín,
Is mo cuingir san fear san fás,
Atá an-sóḡ ar mo muirear,
Is a n-uillinn san éadac slán ;
Atá an tóir ar mo mullac,
Go minic ó tigearna ~ an stáit,
Atá mo bróḡa-sa briste,
'S san pinginn dá bfiada ~ im' láim. (Seán Clárac).

The metre is :—

(a) Lines 1, 3, 5, 7.— ~ | á ~ | ó ~ | 1 (ü) ~
(b) „ 2, 4, 6, 8.— ~ | i ~ | é (ia) ~ | á.

Observe :—1. Stanza=4 (a+b) alternating. 2. Elision in ll. 6, 8. 3. *Δicill* *Donair* connecting the ll. of each couplet :—1 ~ : 1 ~.

2° *An τ-Octpoclac* :—In eight-lined stanzas, when each couplet can be sub-divided into three uniform members, + a fourth of different structure, the metre is called *Octpoclac* (p. 5. 64).—

NUAIR téiríom go tigh an tábairne is glaoðaim ar an
Drawer,

Is éascaíó bíonn táim díob ag teacht síos ;

Is éigean le dáracht ná réabaim mo cána

NUAIR pléascaim an clár is mé ag feoḡail ;
Bíonn saotar an báis ortá—" Pray, do you call, Sir?"

Ní féadaim gan gáire fá'n ealaídam,

Is tréan tigh an máigistír go séisread im' dáiil-se,

Is séim tigh im' látar is beannuigeas. (Seán ó Tuama).

The metre is :—

(a) Lines 1, 3, 5, 7.— $\sim \mid \acute{e} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{e} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim$

(b) „ 2, 4, 6, 8.— $\sim \mid \acute{e} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \acute{i}.$

This is equivalent to :— $\sim \{ 3 (\acute{e} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim) \} + \acute{a} \acute{i}.$

If we call the segment " $\mid \acute{e} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid$ " a^i , and
" $\acute{a} \acute{i}$ " b^i , then $a+b$ will $= 3 a^i + b^i$, and the final formula
for the stanza, instead of $4 (a+b)$ will be $4 (3 a^i + b^i)$.
Note the elision in ll. 1, 4.

3° Eight-line stanzas of which four constitute a
refrain :—

NÁR cáilleadó-sa amarc mo súl,

'S nár lagadó mo lút le foirbteact,

Go bfaicead an grádam i bpúnn,

'S an seana-poc dall gan giolla aige ;

Is oscaró ag coscairt a namad

Le fuinneamh gac crobairc cine Scuirt,

Scríosparó as innis gac Gall,

'Sis sinne beas teann na b'fionna-bruig. (Mac Crait).

The metre is :—(a) ll. 1, 3.— $\sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{u}$

(b) ll. 2, 4.— $\sim \mid \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{u} \sim \mid \acute{i} \sim \sim$

(c) ll. 5, 7.— $(\sim) \mid o(1) \sim \sim \mid o(1) \sim \sim$

(d) ll. 6, 8.— $\sim \mid \acute{i} \sim \sim \mid ou \sim \sim \mid \acute{i} \sim \sim$

Observe :—1. The stanza $= 2 (a+b) + 2 (c+d)$. 2. No
elision in l. 1. amarc $= \acute{a}$ Varc. 3. $\acute{a}icill$ úbalta between
a and b :— $\acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{u} \sim : \acute{a} \sim \sim \mid \acute{u} \sim$; and between c and
d :— $o(1) \sim \sim \mid \acute{au} \sim : \acute{i} (o) \sim \sim \mid \acute{au} \sim$. 4. foirbteact is
trissyllabic. 5. dall = outl.

4° Eight-lined stanzas without $\acute{a}icill$:—

FEARAM FÍCE BEANNACT ORT
 A FÁINNE CAN LAE,
 IS GATA GILE A SCAIPEAD AGAT
 FÉ'M DÁIL AG TÉACT;
 LEIOTNE ANOIR ÓN BPAIRRGE
 IS CEO NA GCHOC DÁ SLADAD AIGE,
 GLÓR NA SRUT DOM' MEALLAD ANOIS
 CUN ADACHTA IS AER (F.D. 10).

The metre is :—(a) ll. 1, 3.— \sim | Δ \sim | 1 \sim | Δ \sim \sim
 (b) ll. 2, 4, 8.— \sim | Δ \sim | é.
 (c) ll. 5, 6, 7.— \sim | ó \sim | ú \sim | Δ \sim \sim

Observe :—1. Stanza—2 (a+b)+3 c+b. 2. No Δ icill.
 3. Elision in ll. 2, 3, 5-8.

(g) Stanza with fourteen lines :—

- a. { Dá binne séis a tana- $\text{g}^{\text{u}}\text{ib}$
 ná fuinneam méar ag spreagad puirt,
 'S ná cruit an té do treascair mis,
 b. Cioð baot dom a ráð.
 a. { 'S ba gile a h-éadan sneactamail
 ná 'n lile caom, 's ná an eala ar srut,
 'S ba snuigte caol a mala suröte
 b. Ar réalt-dearc gan cáim;
 c. { A mama cruinne ar sean g^{a} -cruit nár léanao le
 práisc,
 A leabhar-croo do beartaó loingear, éanlaic is
 bláic,
 d. { Dá mionla maorda maiseamail
 A h-íogar 's a scéim 's a pearsa-cruit,
 Do $\text{g}^{\text{r}}\text{iosad}$ mé cum labarta
 b. Ins na bréictuib seo im' deá $\text{g}^{\text{a}}\text{r}^{\text{o}}$.

The metre is :—(a) \sim | 1 \sim | é \sim | Δ \sim \sim
 (b) \sim | é \sim \sim | Δ .
 (c) \sim | Δ \sim \sim | Δ \sim \sim | é \sim \sim | Δ
 (d) \sim | i \sim | é \sim | Δ \sim \sim .

Observe :—1. The stanza= $3a+b+3a+b+2c+3d+b$.
 2. Elision in ll. 5, 6, 7, 9. Especially the end-elision in
 l. 7. 3. Maiseamail, sneactamail, labarta (=lavarha)
 are trisyllabic. 4. (c) might be scanned :—

\sim | Δ \sim | 1 \sim | Δ \sim | 1 \sim | é \sim \sim | Δ | .

5. c. ends with b.—é \sim \sim | Δ

APPENDIX

WORD FORMATION.

A.—Verbal Nouns.

326.—1° In many compounds the **root** (especially when it ended in a guttural) is inflected as a neuter *o-* stem :—

ΔΤΑΡΡΑĆ (ΔΙΤΕΑΡΡΑĆ), change (<O.I. *ad-eir-rig*, reforms). Cf. ΔΙΤΡΙΓΕ, ΔΙΤΡΕΑĆΑΣ, repentance ; CUIBREAĆ (CUMBREAĆ), binding, etc. (<O.I. *con-rig*, binds). New vb.—CUIBRIΓIM ; CUMROAĆ, covering, etc. (<O.I. *con-utaing*). New vb.—CUMROIΓIM ; FOŁAĆ, hiding (<FOŁUIΓIM ; TOBĀĆ, levying, etc. (<O.I. *do-boing*) ; TORMAĆ, increase, etc. (<O.I. *do-formaig*) ; FUIREAĆ, detaining, waiting, watching (<fo-rig).

The above give rise to the vb. n. ending -aĆ :—CEANNAĆ, buying, vb.—CEANNUIΓIM ; CUAROAĆ, seeking, vb.—CUARROIΓIM ; CNUASAĆ, gathering, vb.—CNUASUIΓIM.

FULAŃ, suffering (<O.I. *fo-loing*) ; TAFANŃ (TATANT), driving, barking at, etc. (<O.I. *do-seinn*, drives). Vb.—TAFNAM ; AĖALL, adultery, etc. (<O.I. *ad-ella*, visits) ; TAĖALL, touching, etc. (<O.I. *do-aidlea*, approaches, assails) ; OIALŁ, declension (now OIO-CLANAO).

327.—2° Some are neuter *io-* stems :—

ΔΙΤNE, acquaintance (<O.I. *ad-gnin*, recognises) ; EAGNA, wisdom (<O.I. *asa-gnin*) ; FOĖA (FOĖA), attack (<O.I. *fo-ben*) ; FREAGRA, answer (<O.I. *fris-gair*) ; AĖRA, TAĖRA, FOĖRA, from the same vb. root ; UIΓE, lying. Cf. FOŁAĆ, above ; SURĖ, sitting (<*sodiom—rt. sed, sod).

328.—3° Some are *ia-* stems (F.) :—

Clárœ, fence (act of digging) ; *surœ*, prayer, etc. ;
íte, to eat ; *stíge*, way, road, etc.

329.—4° Different stems (*i-* or *a-*), but with *-t* ending in modern Irish. All Feminine :—

béit, to be ; *breít*, to bear, etc. In compounds it takes the form *-báirt*. E.g.—*tabáirt*, *íobáirt* ; *teáct*, coming (going) ; *meít*, grinding (O.I. *mlith*) ; *ceít*, conceal (O.I. *cleith*). Cf.—*cúimít*, rubbing, *coisít*, concealing, sparing.

330.—5° Some were originally neuter *o-* stems, with *-to* suffix. (Cf. 326, where there was no such suffix) :—

brat, to betray, etc. (O.I. *mrath* < *mairnid*, betrays) ;
rat, grace, etc. (no longer verbal) ; *dearmáto*, mistake
(*dearmáto*, with unaspirated *m*, because of *formáto*, envy).

331.—6° Masculine *u-* stems, some with suffix *-tu* others with *-mu-*.

(a) With *-tu* :—*moláto*, praise ; *síneáto*, stretch. (So all verbals in *-áto*) ; *rios* (< **vid-tu-s*) ; *meas*, esteem, etc. (O.I. *midiur*, I judge) ; *coimeáto*, keep, etc. (O.I. *comét*. U. *coimeáto*). In *riosruigim*, I enquire (< *rios*) the *r* is due to *riafriugim*.

(b) With *-mu* :—*gníom*, deed ; *véanam*, to do ;
rógnam, service ; *congnam*, help ; *sníom*, spin, etc.
teárganam from same root ; *cosnam*, defend (now also *cosam*) ; *tuitleam*, earn (< O.I. *do·sli*) ; *iomram*, voyage (O.I. *im·rá*, voyages).

332.—7° Feminine *n-* stems, with *-tiu* in old N. sg.—

óroean, protection (O.I. *do·eim*, protects) ; *foisge*,
foróne, patience (O.I. *foditiu*, from *fo·daim*, suffers) ;
feiscint (*faicsim*), to see,—v.n. of O.I. *ad·ci* was *aicsiu* <
ad-ces-tió ; *faoisom*, confession (O.I. *foisitiu*, modelled
on O.I. *aititiu*, v.n. of *ad·daim*, admits).

333.—8° Feminine *ā-* stems (with suffix *-mā-*) :—

agallam, dialogue, etc. (G. now *agallma*). New vb.

ḁḡallaim ; cnerðeam, faith (now M.) ; éiḡeam, cry, etc. Cf. O.I. erigem, complaint; maorðeam, boasting (now M.).

334.—9° Neuter n- stems (with suffix -mn- or -smn-):—

béim, a blow, v.n. of O.I. benaid. New vb. béimim ; céim, step, v.n. of O.I. cingid. New vb.—céimniḡim ; foḡlum, learn, v.n. of O.I. fo-gleinn. New vb.—foḡlumniḡim ; ðréim, endeavour, etc., v.n. of ðringið, climbs. Cf. ðréimire, ladder ; ḡairm, calling. But in compounds -ḡra (neut. io- stem), freaḡra, etc. ; léim, leap, v.n. of O.I. lingid. Mod. limgim, léimim ; maròm, rout, v.n. of O.I. maidid, there is a bursting ; réim, course, etc., v.n. of O.I. rédid, journeys ; seim (G. seanma, semme), playing, etc. (Also seinnt, semneamaint) ; snaròm, knot. O.I. naidm, v.n. of nascid, knots ; tuitim, fall. O.I. tothaim.

335.—10° Feminine i- stems (with suffix -ni-) :—

ḁim, tām, iomáint, tīomáint, comáint—all=the act of driving (Rt. ag, L. ago); buam, reap, <*bog-ni- v.n. of O.I. bongid, breaks, etc. New verbs, buaimim, baimim (v.n. baint). Cf. buanurðe, a reaper.

336.—11° Miscellaneous :—

ḁltram, fosterage, etc.—v.n. of O.I. alid, nurtures. Mod. oilim, v.n.—oileamaint. But there is also a verb ḁltramaim ; anacal, protection < O.I. aingid, protects ; aðnacal, burial—a compound of the previous word ; tíoðlacað, gift, etc.—O.I. tindnacu, v.n. of do·indnaig, bestows ; ḡaðail (O.I. N. gabál, an a- stem, with a doubtful suffix) ; reic, sell, v.n. of O.I. renaid, sells, modelled on ioc (O.I. ícc). From reic comes éiric, compensation, “eric” ; leanamaint, follow (O.I. lenamon) ; fanamaint, wait (Mid. I. anad) ; cinneamaint, fate, v.n. of cinnim, I fix, appoint, etc. ; céaðal, chanting, v.n. of O.I. canid, sings, with suffix -tlo, can-tlo (neuter o- stem). There are two well-known compounds: claisceaðal—singing in harmony (now M.), and—foirceaðal, instruction, etc.—v.n. of O.I. for·cun, I teach ; scríbeann, a writing, léiḡeann, a lesson, etc., and ḁir-

reann, Mass, are modelled on L. gerundial forms, and are not strictly vb. nouns.

337.—12° The v.n. is sometimes from a root other than that of the verb :—

ḡal, is used as v.n. of O.I. fichid. It survives in—eagat, fear (<ek-gal), vóigat, vengeance (vóigatcas), fogat, robbery, fogtúe, robber, togat, destruction (Earlier togal), fiongat, the murder of a kinsman; searc, v.n. of caraid. loves. Déirc (<Dé+searc), the love of God, alms; ráð, v.n. of ráidid, is now v.n. of oeirim, I say, the old v.n. of which—epert, now abairt—means phrase, sentence; teact, v.n. of O.I. tiagu (now téigim) is used as v.n. of tigim, tagaim, while out is used as v.n. of téigim.

B.—Other Nouns.

338.—I.—Combination of adjective and noun :—

Deag-cómairle, good advice; iolar, many people, things (<il, many and fear); áro-rí, high King; fionn-barra, “fair-head,” St. Fionbarr; mór-cúis, self-esteem; gearr(á)-cúro, a considerable number (amount).

339.—II.—Combination of noun and noun :—

Talam-cúmucuáð, earthquake; muir-bran, sea-raven; rig-teac, palace; fíor-ecat, mousetrap, *lit.*—wood-cat; marc-sluaḡ, cavalcade; briatar-ecat, word battle; tóin-marbáð, homicide; ban-čara, woman-friend; bamis (bam+feis), wedding-feast; anam-čara, spiritual director; fion-ḡort, vineyard; aball-ḡort, orchard.

340.—III.—Combination of indeclinable particle (other than a preposition) with a noun :—

Soileas (<so+leas), comfort, etc.; soiceall, joy, opposed to voiceall, churlishness; sočar, profit, opposed to vočar, loss; mí-meas, disrespect; mí-sásam, dissatisfaction; mí-maise, ugliness; mí-teist, infamy; deoḡair, diphthong (<de-fogair). De is composition form of dó, two; ana-lá, a great day; ana-čabairt amac, a

great display ; bít-*b*ríš, essence ; *don-m*ac *De*, the only Son of God ; *m*óeom (*am*móeom) in phrase *m*óeom, in spite of ; *am*eolas, ignorance ; *am*óeise, affliction, etc. ; *am*mían, passion ; *é*as*cóir* (<*en-cóir*), injustice ; *é*as*car*óe*act*, promptitude (from *scít*, weariness) ; *am*teas, disimprovement, etc. ; *am*ras (<*am*-*ireas*, *lit.*—want of faith), doubt *neam*níó, nothing ; *neam*-*sum*, carelessness.

341.—IV.—By means of prepositional prefixes. (Some vb. nouns are included) :—

1° The prep. *ad*, Lat. *ad* :—

(a) Before vowels and old *u*, it appears as *ad* :—

*ad*onacal, burial (<*ad-anacal*) ; *tar*ó*b*se, ghost, v.n. of O.I. *do-ad-bat*, shows ; *ad*ra*ó*, adoration.

(b) The *o* assimilates with *t*, *v*, *c*, *s*, *b*, *m* :—

*ad*it*re*ad*ó*, dwelling, <*ad-treabh*, with *á* because of *ad*it ; *ad*ou*g*ad*ó*, kindling (fire), from *ad-o-ógad*ó ; *ad*csin (*peis-cint*), from **ad-ces-tio* ; *amus*, aim, etc., from *ad-mess*.

(c) Before *l*, *n*, *r*, it becomes *al* :—

*al*il, pleasure, from *ad-li* ; *al*ram, counting, from *ad-ríom* ; *al*nsr*ó*, Accusative case, from *ad-ness*—(O.I. *áinsem*).

(d) With the preposition *od* following, it combined to form generally *ed*, *or*, and in modern I. *íod*, *íor* :—

*íod*ó*b**ad*ir*ct*, *íor*b*ir*ct, sacrifice, from O.I. *ad-od-beir*, *ad-opair*.

342.—2° The prep. *an* :—

When stressed it appears in modern Irish as :—

(a) *oir*.—*oir*óe*arc*as, conspicuousness (from *óearc*).

(b) *ur*, or *úr*.—*úr*nu*ig*te, prayer, prayers. O.I. *er-ini-gude*, *irnigde* ; *úr*l*ab*ra, speech, rhetoric. Syncopated in *ad*it*ri*ge, repentance (O.I. *ad-eir-rige*).

343.—3° The prep. *ait* (*aithe*). It has three forces in modern Irish :—*reiterative*, *intensive* and *negative* :—

*ait*ne, acquaintance ; *ait*easc, answer (Same rt. as in *cosc*, check) ; *at*-*lá*, another day ; *ait*b*l*iam, New Year ; *at*c*u*inge, request ; *at*c*ad*oir, reproach.

344.—4° The prep. céad :—

Found only in céadφαιρ, sense. Thurneysen equates it with Gk. κατά. We have the same formation in W. canfod, to perceive.

345.—5° The prep. com (L. cum, con-) :—

(a) Before vowels, and ι, η, ρ,—cóm :—

Cómaíre, advice ; comíoeaēt, accompanying ; cóm-luadap, company ; cómnasc, conjunction ; cómraō, conversation.

(b) Before ι, e, u, sometimes cum (cuim) :—

Cuimreac (cuibreac), binding ; cúmsanaō, repose, etc. (cóm-uō-ess-anadh ?).

(c) Before ρ, con ; before ζ, con- combining with ζ to form nζ (single consonant) :—

Comíoeaζ, comparison ; congnaím, help (nζn=nn) ; congbaít, to keep.

(d) It eclipses τ, c, giving coo-, coζ- :—

Coōlaō, sleep (<con-tulud) ; coζaō, war (<con-cat) ; coζap, whisper (<con-cor).

(e) Before s it becomes co- (with original doubling of s) :—Cosmaít, like (<samaít), cosamlaēt, likeness ; cosnaím, protection (<co-sníom).

(f) Before old v the m disappears in cuarō (com-ved) ; so in cumne (com-men). But cumasc, mixture, and cumíτ, rubbing, have unaspirated m. In other cases m—v (f) give v :—cuōus, conscience, <φios ; cuōarō, cuōe, fitting (com+fid). Noun cuōeas ; coīōneas, relation (com+fine+as).

(g) In borrowed words :—

1° **Con** (com) renders the L. con- :—

Comblíoēt, conflict (with eclipsis of φ-) ; comtīm, contention ; coínsias, conscience.

2° **Com-** before p :—

Compōro, comfort ; comparáro, comparison ; compánaē, companion. But see other exx. under (h).

(h) In later compounds the antevocalic form cóm- is used before all consonants, and aspirates (in imitation of réam- before) :—

Cómctíonól, gathering ; cómbnúgaō, contrition ; cóm-gluaíseāēt, simultaneous movement ; cómpáíreōe, part-

ner ; cômceangal, union ; cômòatca, member of a society ; cômhadoròeam, congratulation.

346.—6° The prep. **oí, oe** :—

(a) Before vowels, and most consonants, **oí** :—

Oíall, declension ; oíogbáil, injury ; oítreab, hermitage ; oímeas, disrespect ; oíocumne, forgetfulness ; oíbreirg, vengeance.

(b) Before **ro**, and broad **c, g, b**,—**oe** :—

Oearmab, mistake, etc. ; oearcor, difference ; oéanam, to do (with compensatory lengthening) ; oearbairb, strife (de+buith).

347.—7° The prep. **as** (L. ex.) :—

(a) Before vowels, and **c, t, s**,—**eas, eis** :—

Easonóir, dishonour ; eisíompláir, example ; eis-ceact, exception to a rule ; eascara, enemy ; teastabáil, v.n. of O.I. do·esta, is wanting, etc. ; easláinte, illness (eas-sláinte).

(b) Sometimes **ais** :—

Aiséirge, resurrection. Perhaps due to **ais** in tar n-ais, back. Cf.—aiseas (<íoc), restitution : vomiting ; aisnéis, predication.

(c) Before **l, m, n, r**, it becomes **é** :—

Éalób, escape, etc. (ess-lud) ; éirce, weakness. Now mirce, owing to inert, inertia ; éiric, compensation (ess-reic).

(d) Before **b, o, g**, it appears as **ek-** with assimilation of **k**, giving unaspirated **b, o, g** :—

Abairt, phrase=O.I. epert<*ek-bert ; eagal, fear, <*ek-gal.

348.—8° The prep. **san**, O.I. cen :—

Only in ceanntar, the district on this side, as opposed to alltar (obs.) the district on the other side. The radical meaning of O.I. cen was “on this side of,” hence “without.” Cf.—L. cis, citra ; Gk. ἐ-κεῖ, there ; and I. bith cé, this world here.

349.—9° The prep. **uir, eadar**, L. inter :—

Eadarguróteoir, intercessor ; Oaródom, Thursday—

“the day between two fasts.” *foir* causes aspiration (imitating *ar*). If *foir* is from “*foir* *da* *dom*,” the non-aspiration of the second *o* may be due to *Céadom* (which it follows), or to assimilation to the initial *o*.

350.—10° The prep. *fo* (Modern *fo*, *fé*, *fa*, *foi*) :—

(a) Before consonants, *fo*, *fo* (with compensatory lengthening) :—

foighe, *forone*, patience ; *foighnam*, service.

(b) Before *o*, *a*,—*fo*, *fu*, *fa* :—

foighra, announcement (*fo-od-gaire*) ; *foibairt*, attack (*fo-od-bert*) ; *fuaasnao*, tumult (*fo-od-ess-anad* ?) ; *faigh*, leaving (*fo-ad-gabhail*).

(c) Before syncopated *a* in second syllable—*fa* :—

faighail, to get (*fo-gabhail*) ; *faighias*, means, property).

351.—11° The prep. *for*, Gk. *ὑπέρ*, L. *super* :—

formao, envy (*for-ment-*) ; *forail*, excess. With metathesis, *fulair*, unnecessary ; *forghnuigheoir*, a builder (CMD. 338). Often with *o*, and aspirating :—*foirceann*, the very end ; *forlamas* (*forlamas*), usurpation, etc. ; *foirneart*, tyranny.

352.—12° The prep. *fri*(*t*). Root *virt.* of L. *vorsus* :—

(a) Before vowels, *frit* :—

friting, return track ; *friotailam*, service ; *aris*, again < a *frith-éissi*, Accus. of Space.

(b) Before consonants, the orig. *th* of *frith* assimilates:

freagra, an answer (<*frith-gaire*).

(c) Later compounds show *frit* before consonants (aspirating like *ait-*) :—

friotbualao, repercussion ; *friocnam*, care, diligence = earlier *frithgnam* (<*gníomh*). *Th* became *h*, unvoicing *gh*. The long *i* may be due to *criocnamail*, which has the same meaning as the adj. *friocnamail*.

353.—13° The prep. *iar*, after :—

fiarurao, enquiry (*v.n.* of O.I. *iarfóig*, with prothetic *f*, metathesis of *r* and *f*, and (in finite verb forms) assimilation to verbs in *-is* ; *iartar*, West (aspiration in imitation of *oirtar*). So *iar-míre*, *iar-míuma* ;

iarlann, pantry ; iariscúl, backward place ; iarimbéarla, adverb, etc.

354.—14° The prep. *imbi*, *im* (modern *um*) :—

(a) Before vowels and *r*—*im*, *iom* :—

imeasla, great fear ; *iomáin*, hurling ; *imreimre*, obesity ; *tímceall* (with *to*-), round, about.

(b) Before *s*—*imp* :—

iompóó, to turn (<*imbi-soud*) ; *impróe*, supplication (<*imbi-suróe*). But later :—*imsearc*, warm affection, *imníom*, fatigue, etc.

(c) Before other consonants, *m*- (aspirating) :—

imteaó, going away ; *imóeargaó*, reviling, etc. ; *m-imiscém*, afar. (A contamination of *imcém* and *iscém*).

355.—15° The prep. *in* :—

In composition it has three forms, *in*-, *en*- and *ini*- (Gk. *ἐν*), and a fourth form *ind*- is probably identical with the L. prep. *endo*, *indu* in *induere*, to put on, *Induperator*, archaic form of *Imperator*.

(a) *en*—which becomes *é* before *c*, *τ* :—

Éisteáó, listening. O.I. *étsecht* ; *éasgóir*, wrong. In *teasas*, teaching, and *easár*, arrangement, the short *e* is irregular.

(b) *in*- (now *ionn*) :—

tionnscáó, a beginning, v.n. of O.I. *do·in·scanna* ; *tionnscá*, design, etc. (Pron. *tiúscal* in W. Munster) ; *tionntóó*, turning (<*to-indi-soud*) *ionnarba*, exile (O.I. *indarbae*) ; *ionnraó*, attack (K.), O.I. *indred*.

(c) Before vowels, and many consonants, *m* :—

infiúcaó, scanning ; *inro*, Shrovetide. L. *initium*, beginning (of Lent) ; *mbeár*, estuary ; *impeáó*, aspiration. O.I. *tinfed* <*to-in-fed* (*sved*).

(d) *m*- :—

úrnuigte (See 342) ; *mgean*, daughter, Ogham *inigena*. Cf. L. *indigena*, native.

356.—16° The prep. *ó* (*ua*, *oó*, *uaó*) :—

(a) Syncopated :—

loóbaírt, sacrifice ; *óiomus*, pride (<*di-ud-mess*) ;

cúmbaδc, protection, etc. (<com-ud-ding—conutaing).

(b) After fo, ro, to, we get fó, ró, tó :—

fógra, announcement ; tógáil, raising. In tobair, well, and tosaδc, beginning, the short o is irregular.

(c) Before t, —o :—

tíonóil, a gathering.

357.—17° The prep. **re**, before :—

The composition form in modern I. is réamh.

Réamhfocail, preposition ; réamhráð, foreword ; réamhteachtáiríe, antecedent (of relative).

358.—18° The prep. **ro**, L. pro :—

Roḡa, choice (subjective), toḡa (objective) ; ros, promontory (<prosthā ?) ; vearmáð, mistake, etc.

359.—19° The prep. **seac** :—

Seacáðað ñovlaḡ, Xmas box (<2 sg. prep. pron. seacáð, past you).

360.—20° The prep. **tar** :—

Toirmeasc, confusion, etc. ; tairmteacht, transgression.

361.—21° The prep. **to** (pretonic, ðo) :—

(a) Before consonants—mostly to (tu), tó (with compensatory lengthening) :—

Tuittim, falling, O.I. tothaim ; tómas, riddle, etc. (<to-fo-mess) ; ti- in tiḡeacht (modelled on tiḡim ?). O.I. tuidecht, with ð for th.

(b) **ta, tá** :—

Taðairt, <to-bert, because of the Perf. tarat (<do·rat) ; tárla, happened, <O.I. tarla (<do·rala.)

(c) Te- in teittim, I throw away, v.n. teittgean. From to-en-léig <teillg, teilg (*Thurn.*, 481).

(d) Ti- in Conn. Fut. tiubrað, on the model of the old reduplicated Fut. with i in reduplicating syllable.

(e) Before vowels, t- (tó, tua, before oð-, tógáil) :—

Tám, drove, etc. (<to-ag-ni-s) ; tuittim, tímceall (i because of position before -mbc).

(f) **τó-** before **por**, **oò** :—

τóρμας, increase, v.n. of O.I. **do·for·maig** ; **τόζάιλ**, raising, <to-od-gabáil.

362.—22° The prep. **τρέ** :—

τρίαι, journey. Cf. **αὐάιλ**, **ταὐάιλ**, **οἰάιλ**, from the same root.

V.—By means of Suffixes.

363.—A.—From adjectives :—

1° The suffix **-e** (=old **-ia**) :—

ῥάιτε, welcome, from **ῥάιτῶ**, joyous ; **ῥυαίρε**, coldness. With many adjectives, however, this suffix is not used. E.g.—**μόρ**, **βεας**, etc, those in **-αῖμαί**, or those ending in a vowel.

2° -e (< **-io**, orig. neut. stems) :—

Ῥεῖσε, prettiness, etc. ; **μαῖσε**, beauty. Now F. like those in **1°**.

3° -ise, -se (an extension of **2°**) :—

Σαοίρσε, freedom ; **Ῥαοίρσε**, bondage. Now F. like **1°** and **2°**.

4° -tut. O.I. Nom. in **-u** (Now in **-a**, or **-e**) :—

βεατα, life, O.I. **bethu** ; **σλάιτε**, health, O.I. **slántu**.

5° -as. Old **-us** < **essus**, **estus** ; and **as** from **-assus** :—

ἰοννρακας, uprightness ; **βινneas**, melody. O.I. **bindius**.

6° -s, from monosyllabic adjectives :—

Ῥαοίς, folly (**Ῥαοτ**) ; **ῤαοίς**, wisdom (**ῤαοτ**, wise) ; **ῤνάς**, fashion (**ῤνάτ**) ; **σείος** (**scís**), fatigue (**scít**).

7° -αῖτ (Collective and abstract) :—

Κοσάιταῖτ, likeness, etc. ; **κλῑστεαῖτ**, cleverness ; **μόρῶαῖτ**, majesty ; Nouns in **-αῖτ** from adjectives in **-μαρ** seem to come through the abstract in **-e** :—**λίονμαρ**, numerous, gives **λίονμαίρε**, **λίονμαίρεαῖτ** ; **νεαρτμαρ**, strong, gives **νεαρτμαίρε**, **νεαρτμαίρεαῖτ**.

8° -a (Now mostly **-e**. O.I. **bochta**, poverty, now **βοίκτη**). But—**ῠρλαβρα**, speech ; **ceannsa**, gentleness (Now usually an adj. The old adj. was **ceannais**. K. has **ceannais**).

9° -**tas**, -**uas**=Mid. I. *tu+as*. The former is used after consonants, the latter after vowels :—

Bréantas, putridity, Mid. I. *bréntu* ; **borcas**, darkness, Mid. I. *dorchatu*.

10° -**ar**, -**acar** :—

lotar, many, from *lt-* ; the few in -**acar** may have originated in **salacar**, dirt, from **salac**, dirty (lit. *salacious*) ; **lagacar**, weakness ; **mallacar**, weakness (mostly of sight).

11° -**t**, from adjs. in -**ac** :—

feadomannact, stewardship ; **cartannact**, charity.

12° -**ad** :—

uataad, singleness, etc., either from the *rt.* seen in Gk. *αὐτός* self, same, or from *pau-* as in L. *paucus*, few.

13° **ioe** (preceded by a dim. suffix -**qo-**) :—

Seancaroe, story-teller. Cf. L. *senex*, I. **seancas**, history, etc. The L. *re-ci-pro-cu-s*, going backwards and forwards, contains the suffix -**qo-** twice.

14° -**seac**, a F. termination. Cf. L. -*issa* :—

ḡaillseac, foreign women, ear-wig ; **céirseac**, female blackbird (**ciar**, black) ; **bámseac**, white cow ; **minnseac**, young she-goat (*mionn-án, meann-án, kid*) ; **ḡirseac**, girl (**ḡearr**). **lomḡseac**, exile, etc., does not contain this suffix, but -**ac** from *lomḡas* exile, etc.

15° **is-tero-**. A double comparative suffix found in :—

Sinnsear, elder, ancestor <*sen-is-teros* ; **sóisear**, junior (O.I. *óssar*) modelled on the preceding. The suffix -**is-** is the weakest form of the compar. suffix found in L. *ios, ies, is*. (L. *major* <*mag-ios* ; *majestas* <*mag-ies-tas* ; *mag-is*).

16° -**ac** :—

fásac, desert, from **fás**, waste, L. *vastus*.

17° -**ine**. Cf. L. -*inia* :—

fírinne, truth.

18° **óḡ** :—

ḡnátóḡ, wild beast's lair ; **ciaróḡ**, black chafer (**ciar**, black).

19° -**án** (dim.) :—

beagán, little, few ; **mórán**, much, many ; **ciarán** (man's name).

364.—B.—From nouns :—

1° -**ACT** :—

TEACTAIREACT, message ; FÍLRÉACT, poetry ; BREITEAMNACT, judgeship. From nouns like this last one—AMNACT, spread. E.g.—Bibdamnacht, from bibdu (a dental stem). Hence BITEAMNAC, thief, villain.

2° -**ACTAIN** (in vb. nouns, -ACTAINT, -CAINT) :—

CURÉACTAIN, company ; AIREACTAINT, hearing ; AITBEORCAINT, reviving. In vb. nouns -ACTAINT seems to come from BEANNACTAIN, MALLACTAIN (D. sg.), with -T added, as in FANAMAIN, LEANAMAIN.

3° -**AS** :—

LÁNAMNAS, carnal intercourse ; AÐALTRAS, adultery. This contains also the compar. -ter (syncopated, -tr), with reminiscence, no doubt, of L. adulter, adulterium. The other form, AÐALTRANAS, from AÐALTRANNAC, which, perhaps, owes its -ANNAC, to EACTRANNAC, foreigner.

4° -**ISSE**, Mod. -**ISE** :—

FÍADONAISE, witness, O.I. fiadu, a witness, G. fiadan. There is no need to call in the Mid. Eng. witnesse to explain our form.

5° -**RAÐ**, -**RAÐ**, collective.

LUAITREÐ (LUAITREAC) ashes. Cf. L. lavo, I wash. Ashes are Nature's soap ; OIGRE(Ð), ice, O.I. aig-red ; GNÍOMRAÐ, deeds. From this GNÍOMARCA, used as Pl. of GNÍOM. Cf. CONNARCA, Pl. of CONNRAÐ ; LAOCRAÐ, fighting men. L. laicus, layman (Clerics were exempt from military service) ; MACRAÐ, youths ; SAMRAÐ, Summer (Gk. ἡμέρα, day) ; GEIMREÐ, Winter (L. hiems).

6° -**LAIT**, collective (Really the n. FLAIT, Kingdom) :—
ÉANTLAIT, birds (the bird Kingdom).7° -**TRACT**, collective :—

ÐANTRACT, women-folk.

8° -**AIRT**, collective :—

CONAIRT, hounds. Possibly the noun SRAIT, series (Cf. L. sero). For the change in form in compounds, cf. BREIT, TAÐDAIRT, etc.

9° -**LAC**, collective. (The n. STÓŠ, STUAŠ, host) :—

TEAŠLAC, household ; MUCLAC, piggery, drove of pigs.

10° -**ÐE** (earlier -**RÐ**, -**ITH**), denoting the agent :—

SCÉALARÐE, story-teller ; AMMNÐE, the Nominative.

11° -**am**, -**eam**, denoting the agent :—

breiteam, judge ; **féiceam**, debtor, from **fiada**, debts ;
tuam, pilot, <*pleu- ; **Dúiteam**, Creator, from **dúil**,
creature, element. **feallsam**, philosopher, is assimilated
to this class. Earlier **felsub**, from L. (Gk.) **philosophus**.

12° -**aire** (L. -**ārius**), denoting the agent :—

Teachtair, messenger ; **básaire**, executioner ; **reachtair**,
law-giver ; **áltaire**, brood-mare.

13° -**oir**, agent, instrument :—

Dóirseoir, door-keeper ; **comnteoir**, candlestick.

14° -**úir**, -**túir**, agent :—

Doctúir, doctor ; **créatúir**, creature, is, like Eng.
creature, derived from L. **creatura**.

15° -**tóir**, -**dóir**, -**adóir**, also denote the agent :—

Ceoltóir, musician ; **spealadóir**, mower ; **bréagadóir**,
wheedler ; **seanadóir**, senator ; **Purgadóir**, Purgatory.
From these last two the suffix -**adóir** spread.

16° -**án**, diminutive :—

Uiomán, elm. O.I. **lem**, L. **ulmus** ; **cnocán**, hillock ;
corcán, pot, from **crocán**, from E. **crock**.

17° -**ḡán**, -**asán**, diminutive :—

Íosaḡán, little Jesus ; **Doḡasán**, Egan, <**Doḡ**. We
may have here a blending of the Britannie -**og** (=I. **ac**)
with -**án**. Or **ḡ** may be due to **beasán**, etc. We find
also :—

-**acán**—**méaracán**, thimble ; -**acán**—**scasacán**, strainer ;
-**nacán**—**samnacán**, salmon-trout, from **sam**, summer ;
-**adán**—**bréagadán**, toy, **bioránadán**, pin-cushion ; -**racán**
bogracán, blubberer.

18° -**naid** (-**naic**), diminutive :—

blátnaid, Little Flower ; **deanncaid**, flea, <**dearg-**
naid ; **Gobnaic**, St. Gobnait ; **biaitaid**, saddle, may also
have this suffix ; **truasnaic** (KP. 75), poor wretch.

19° -**ín**, diminutive :—

Fírin, little man ; **Nóirín**, little Nora.

20° -**ós**, -**tós** (diminutive originally) :—

Srúeós, fairy ; **míoltós**, gnat ; **cuasnós** (**cúnsós**) nest
of honey-bees—from **cuas**, recess, hollow.

21° -**ne**, -**ine**, diminutive, collective, singulative :—

foitne, single hair—from **foit** (collective) ; **ḡráinne**,
a grain ; **amḡtine**, stormy weather—from **anḡad**, storm.

22° -lo (I. -al) :—

tuatal, withershins. Cf. tuarò, North (the left) ;
 veiseal, the turn to the right ; teimeal, darkness ;
 néal, cloud—from neb-lo. L. nebula.

23° -anas :—

tréròeanas, abstinence. (Three days, three days' fast and abstinence—from tréròe, three things, under the influence of L. triduanus. Cf. aòaltranas. 3°.)

24° -ceart, with local meaning :—

tuaisceart, the North (the -s- is due to veisceart, the South).

25° -lann, where things or persons are kept :—

beaclann, apiary ; leabarlann, library ; ocharlann, infirmary ; amarlann, theatre ; airmleann, armoury ; biaðlann (*Oriel*), kitchen. Annlann, sauce, contains the root of W. llyn, drink. Cf. I. linn.

26° -tas, -tás :—

aitéantás, knowledge ; fiaðantás, wildness ; úgðartás (úgðarás) authority. Mid. I. augtortas.

27° -ac :—

conntac (conntac), stubble—from Mid. I. condall, stalk, stubble.

28° -arnac (In some instances, from -ar and -nac, the suffix -ac with accretion of n from n- stems) :—

coḡarnac, whispering ; clagarnac, heavy rain. In these two the suffix is really -nac. From them may have spread -arnac ; cnagarnac, crackling ; liacarnac, sighing ; luibearnac, weeds ; siosarnac, whispering (siosa, a hiss) ; gnúsarnac, soft lowing of a cow.

29° -actac, collective or iterative :—

casactac, coughing—from rt. cas, W. pas, hooping cough ; gnúsactac, soft lowing.

30° -rac, -lac—of the noises made by animals :—

amastrac, barking—from amastar (suffix really -ac) ; géimreac (also géimneac), lowing ; grágallac, clucking of hens (onomatopoeic) ; siosarac, siotarac (sitreac), neighing ; -artac, in :—sraocharac, sneezing (sraot), uallcharac (uallparac), said of swine (uallparac, growl). Here the suffix is really -ac.

31° -**ḡaít**, -**ḡaí**, -**uíot** :—

Camastuíot, moral crookedness ; ḡráḡḡaít, clucking ; ḡnúḡḡaít, lowing ; pusuíot, pouting ; ḡeavuíot, whistling.

32° -**sine** :—

ḡáístine, prophecy—from ḡárò, prophet. O.I. fáith-sine.

365.—C.—From Adverbs, Prepositions, Pronouns.

1° -**tar** :—

Oírtear, the East. Cf. prep. ar, and adv. tóir ; iarctar, the West. Cf. prep. iar, and adv. tiar ; uaçtar, the top ; íoçtar, the bottom ; ceanntar, district ; neaçtar, ceaçtar, one of two or more.

2° -**lann** :—

lartann, back room, pantry. The word lartleac, tombstone, occurs in the U. song, Éamonn Buiré.

366.—D.—From Verbs.

1° -**irò**, the agent, or kindred meaning :—

Ámsirò, Accusative case—from ad-ness-.

2° -**açt**, abstract :—

Tuḡtaçt, proneness to—from the participle tuḡta.

3° -**as**, -**tas** :—

Tabartas, gift—from the participle tabrta ; ḡáḡaltas, means—from the participle ḡáḡalta (ḡáḡáltta).

4° -**nt**- (-**av**) :—

Carav, friend—from cararò, loves. Cf. L. participle in -nt.

5° -**vōs** (Cf. Gk. Perf. Part. Act. in -ωs) :—

Coimdiu, Lord, mod. Coimròe, from *com-med-vōs. O.I. midiur, I judge.

6° -**s** :—

Bás, death. Orig. v.n. to root ba-. Cf. Gk. ἔβη, Sk. agat, he went.

7° -**am**, the agent :—

luam, pilot—from root *pleu, to sail.

8° -**neoir** (through v. nouns in -n), -**tóir**, -**avóir** :—

Scribneoir, writer ; moltóir, adjudicator ; ḡiḡeavóir, weaver.

9° -tro- (I. -**τᾶρ**) :—

λοῦ**τᾶρ** (loṭṭār), canal, cauldron, etc. L. lavacrum, bath ; τᾶρα**τᾶρ** (τᾶρά**τᾶρ**), gimlet. Gk. τέρε-τρο-ν.

10° -**αῖρε** :—

κλαῖ**ο**αῖρε, thief, rogue, a fish after shedding its spawn. Cf. κλαῖ**ο**ῖσ_ιμ, I dig. For the deterioration in meaning, cf. E. knave, villain, pagan.

Formation of Adjectives.

367.—See 84. Besides the suffixes enumerated there, note the following :—

1° From Numerals :—

(a) -to, -eto (I. **εἰδῶ**) :—

εἰ₅ε₆αῖ**δῶ**, seise₅αῖ**δῶ**, 5th, 6th.

(b) The double suffix -mmo+-eto (I. **-ῖμᾶδῶ**) :—

τρί₃μᾶ₄δῶ, τετρά₄μᾶ₃δῶ, 3rd, 4th, etc. In the I.G. period sometimes -mo was used, sometimes to. E.g.—L. decimus, 10th <*dekm-mo-s. Gk. δέκατος <*dekm-to-s. The two are combined in the I. suffix **-ῖμᾶδῶ**.

2° From Nouns :—

-ῖμᾶδῶ, **-ἄναδῶ** :—

τοῖ₁τε₂α₃να₄δῶ, willing (τοῖ₁) ; οὔ₁στε₂α₃να₄δῶ, legal (οὔ₁τε). These suffixes originated from words like ἀῖμῖμᾶδῶ, ἄλβᾶναδῶ (from nn-, n- stems) with the suffix -ᾶδῶ ; μα₁ρ₂τᾶναδῶ, lasting—from μα₁ρ₂τᾶμ, G. μα₁ρ₂τᾶνα.

3° From Prepositions :—

-λο :—

ὕ₁σα₂α₃ι, noble (ὅ₁s, above) ; ἰ₁σε₂α₃ι, lowly (ἰ₁os, is, below).

Formation of Verbs.

368.—1° Many verbs are derived from nouns and adjectives, by adding the termination **-ῖσ_ιμ**, **υῖσ_ιμ** :—

σα₁ο₂τ₃ρ₄υῖ₅μ, I work ; τε₁α₂σ₃υῖ₅μ, I improve, etc. When the noun was an n- stem, this n appears before the suffix :—

Διμννίσιμ, I name ; céμννίσιμ, I step, advance. This class affects other verbs, " n " appearing by analogy :—

CRÍOC-n-uíσιμ, I finish—from CRÍOC (Δ- stem) ; CRUÍC-n-ίσιμ, I create, form—from CRUÍC (u- stem) ; CRÍOT-n-uíσιμ, I tremble—from CRÍC, G. creata, shaking, ague.

Further *normal* examples :—

Stánuíσιμ, I make well ; potúsíσιμ, I publish (potus, clear) ; árouíσιμ, I raise ; ístíσιμ, I lower.

2° Many verbs are compounded with prepositions. These have been dealt with already.

CRÍOC.

